

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 852: I Need Stimulation...

- Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 852: I Need Stimulation...

Chapter 852: I Need Stimulation...

"Purple, if it wasn't because your soul weren't still that of Ecang, I would suspect that you were Possessed by a tribute!"

"It doesn't matter whether you were Possessed or not, Purple, your soul is still that of Ecang. If you aren't Possessed, then fine, but even if you are, and you're no longer the previous Purple we know, it doesn't matter to us. You just need to keep the promise made between the ten Ecang souls."

"Before we are fully recovered and have fused together to decide who will be the one who will dominate over the rest, do not go and provoke other Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death outside, and do not bring trouble to us."

"What if someone comes to this place to provoke me?!" Su Ming's divine thought immediately rang in space.

"We are Ecang. If they provoke you, then it means that they have provoked us. If they insult you, then it means that they have insulted us. If someone comes here, we will fight back with our full strength!"

"All right!"

After listening to the divine thoughts of the nine souls, Su Ming fell silent for a moment, then agreed to this matter. In truth, he had long since noticed that the nine souls had become suspicious of him. However, his soul belonged to Ecang. Because of that, even if they knew that he had Possessed the purple Ecang, they were still fine with it.

This was the Abyss Builders' inborn talent, a power that gave Su Ming a feeling that it was growing more mysterious with every new thing he learned about it. He also had a sense that Abyss Builders were an existence that even surpassed Ecang.

'Ecang is a form of life that forms its soul from a Sublime Paragon's soul and devours Divine Essence to be born, and I... Possessed Ecang to be strong.' Su Ming pulled back his divine thought and opened his eyes while remaining seated in the one hundred thousand purple galaxies.

'The power of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death certainly shocked me.' Su Ming looked at the purple hue in the galaxy, and determination appeared in his eyes.

'The rise and fall of fate, and the lives of all manner of living are in one hand... Before I Possessed Ecang, I didn't know whether I would ever be able to understand this Realm, but with this Ecang clone, I will be able to head down this legendary path.'

Su Ming slowly closed his eyes, covering the determination in them, but the act of shutting his eyes did not manage to hide the obsession in his heart.

'When I fuse with the other nine Ecang souls, I will be able to surpass this Realm.' Su Ming did not say these words. He only quietly thought them at the instant he closed his eyes.

When Su Ming's Ecang clone closed his eyes, his other clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole opened his eyes in the purple galaxy.

He was sitting cross-legged in space. When he opened his eyes, no determination or obsession could be seen. There was only a profound look in his eyes that made them seem like bottomless pits. If anyone took a closer look into them, they would be able to vaguely see overlapping shadows of runic symbols in the right eye, while a palm was swiftly forming in his left eye.

That palm was a mere illusion, but after Su Ming had survived under the hands of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, he had obtained an epiphany, and this palm was the result of that epiphany. The palm was changing its motions endlessly as Su Ming continued trying to understand his epiphany.

After a long while, he lifted his right hand and looked at his palm, as well as the palm lines on it. After a moment, he swung his right hand, and a green feather in it.

This was the one and only feather he had gained after fusing all the green fledgling feathers he took from Wu Li Zi's brows.

There was no blood on it, but at the instant the feather appeared, the image of a green peacock manifested in space, as if Su Ming was not holding onto a feather, but a peacock.

Su Ming looked at the feather, then lifted his left hand to strike the storage bag. The sleeping bag immediately turned into a ray of dark light that appeared in front of him.

The dark creature had its eyes closed and still did not show any signs of waking up, but at the instant it appeared, the dark light on it shone even more intensely. At the same time, the green peacock in Su Ming's right hand started screeching, as if it had run into a great enemy.

In Su Ming's senses, these two creatures were clearly from the same source, but their current actions caused his eyes to sparkle. He had formed a guess in his heart previously, and right then, he became somewhat certain of his guess.

The dark light from the bald crane burst forth. As it shone furiously, it turned into a black crane. That crane did not have its eyes shut, but they were unfocused. As it let out a piercing screech, it charged towards the green peacock.

The peacock also let out a screech before charging forward. The two birds immediately crashed into each other before Su Ming. There was no sound of collision. In silence, they looked as if they had begun merging with each other. It might seem like a quiet and calm process, but Su Ming could feel that this fusion was akin to an act of devouring.

It would be either the bald crane devouring the green peacock, or the peacock devouring the bald crane.

However, since Su Ming was around, he would definitely not allow the green peacock to succeed. He let out a cold harrumph and lifted his right hand to point swiftly at the green peacock's body as the two of them continued devouring each other.

At the instant he pointed towards it, the green peacock let out a shrill screech of pain. Its body collapsed and turned into bits of glittering green light that were instantly absorbed by the bald crane.

This process lasted for about two hours, and after that, the bald crane's body trembled. Its shut eyes showed signs of opening, but it seemed that the amount of power gathered was not enough, since it could not fully open its eyes.

There probably was still a little bit of power left required for it to fully open its eyes, but if it did not have the power to open them, then it would mean that it would not be able to wake up.

"I... need... sti..." As the bald crane struggled, it said these three syllables with a great exertion of strength. Its eyelids, which had moved apart to form a small crack, seemed to have lost all strength, and looked as if they were about to fall shut once again, causing the signs of it waking up to also disappear.

Su Ming's expression remained the same as usual. He looked at the bald crane and said flatly, "Stop pretending, the green peacock was enough for you to wake up. I don't have crystals anymore, so I can't give you the stimulation you need."

He said that, but the bald crane looked as if it hadn't heard it. As its body trembled, an expression of struggle appeared on it, as if it was gathering all its strength to not fall asleep again, but it could not do so. Its eyes fell shut at that moment, and a feeling that it had fallen into deep slumber spread out from its body.

Su Ming's gaze became focused. The bald crane did not seem to be pretending, and Su Ming could not accept it if the bald crane could not wake up due to crystals. He had risked danger to enter the region where the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World

were stationed and had only been able to obtain the green feathers after barely escaping death when a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death chased after his life.

When he saw that the bald crane was about to wake up but was going to fall asleep again, he lifted his right hand and pressed down on his storage bag without any hesitation. Immediately, the hundreds of spirit stones remaining in his storage bag were all brought out.

The quality of these spirit stones were incredibly good, and they were the last of Su Ming's savings. After all, with the bald crane around, it was incredibly difficult for Su Ming to even keep the crystals he had by his side...

It could be said that all his money was in his hands at that moment. However, to give the bald crane the stimulation it needed, Su Ming had to bring out these spirit stones. Almost at the instant these sparkling spirit stones were brought out from the storage bag, the bald crane looked as if it had sniffed their scent... even though crystals had no scent.

However, it was clear that the bald crane could somehow sniff them. Its nose twitched slightly, and it looked as if new strength had immediately appeared within it. As it trembled, it struggled to open its shut eyes, as if it wanted to look at the crystals it was besotted with.

The strength of that newborn power seemed to provide support for the bald crane wake up from its coma. When it opened its eyes with great difficulty, it cast a glance at those crystals with sparkling eyes, but when it saw that there were only hundreds of them, it instantly lost all its strength and looked as if it was about to enter into deep sleep once more.

"The stimulation... is not enough... I need... more stimulation..." The bald crane continued speaking haltingly and looked as if it was incredibly weakened, but Su Ming could clearly see the spark in its eyes. That was clearly the appearance of someone who was highly alert and full of vigor.

"How much stimulation do you still need?" Su Ming snorted coldly in his heart, but his words were spoken in a relaxed manner.

"I... need... one thousand... no, ten thousand- One hundred thousand!" The bald crane struggled to not let its eyes fall shut, and it looked even more weakened.

"Is one hundred thousand enough? Do you want more?" Su Ming asked softly.

The bald crane was momentarily stunned, but soon, it looked as if strength had returned to its body, as if Su Ming's words were as effective as all forms of medicinal cores.

"Then... give me... one million."

"Mhm, go on ahead and continue sleeping."

Su Ming stood up and swung his right arm in the air before him. The hundreds of crystals immediately vanished, placed back into the storage bag. Once he did so, he turned around, intending to leave.

A shrill screech of pain tumbled out of the bald crane's beak at the instant Su Ming turned around. It seized its chest with its wings and narrowed its eyes into mere slits, looking as if it was out of sorts.

"You... how cruel... I... am going to fall asleep. Farewell, Su Ming, I'm going to sleep."

Su Ming walked into the distance.

"I'm really going to sleep!" the bald crane quickly shouted.

Su Ming moved even farther away.

"I'm really, really going to sleep!" the bald crane screamed wretchedly and closed its eyes completely. Its body fell to the side and begun to float in the galaxy, unmoving, looking exactly how it did when the bald crane had been in deep sleep.

Su Ming's figure could almost not be seen.

"Well, damn you!" The bald crane opened one eye and glared at Su Ming's already indistinct figure as he continued walking into the distance.

"I used my life to help you Possess that Ecang, and you're not saving me even if I'm about to die?! Y-y-you... You're going overboard! It's just a few crystals, just external objects, just... ah..."

The bald crane was mumbling furiously under its breath when it suddenly saw ripples appearing around Su Ming, who was already in the distance. When it saw that he was about to leave the galaxy, it abruptly let out a scream and instantly opened its eyes. At that moment, there were no signs of weakness on it, and it clearly had a look as if it had been infused with a great boost of energy.

"Hey, I'm alright now. That's strange, why did I suddenly become better? Haha, I, Grandpa Crane, have recovered. I am me again!" As it shouted loudly, it swiftly flapped its wings and flew towards Su Ming before crashing head first into those ripples. As Su Ming disappeared, it also vanished.

Its smug laughter alone continued echoing in the galaxy. It fell into the ears of Su Ming's Ecang clone in the distant cosmos. The Ecang clone did not open his eyes, but a hint of a happy smile could be seen at the corners of his lips.

.....

"Hey, Su Ming, where are you taking me? Let me tell you, I'm not going to a place without crystals!"

"Black Ink Planet. Not only does that place have crystals, it also has a part of your physical body there. You can choose not to go."

"I'm going! There are crystals and my physical body there! Darn it all, I'm definitely going! Say... you're too slow. Just watch me, I'm fast."

Chapter 853: Return to Crimson Flame Planet

The galaxy had no end. Its boundaries could not be seen, and it only had that monotonous color scheme filling the entire area. If anyone looked at it for a short period of time, they would think that it was slightly beautiful, but if they looked at it for a prolonged period of time, they would not be able to help but feel lost, as if they did not know where they were.

Their insignificance of their own self compared to the vast galaxy would usually deliver a powerful impact on a person.

At that moment, there was a long arc charging through Western Ring Nebula. That long arc could almost not be seen clearly, because its color was similar to that of the galaxy. They were both black.

There was a dark light within that arc, and it was a black crane. The smug expression on its face and the nasty look in its eyes belonged solely to the bald crane; no other crane possessed this look in the whole universe.

Within the dark light was also a red coffin. There were runic symbols on it that formed bumps, giving the coffin a rough surface. They exuded a mighty pressure. Su Ming sat cross-legged on the coffin, meditating with his eyes closed.

The Duke of Crimson Flame was by his side like an old servant. He was looking around vigilantly, no longer indifferent towards everything like before.

This was the sixteenth day since they left Western Ring Nebula's foreign land.

Perhaps it was due to the appearance of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death as well as his subsequent fight against Su Ming, but during those sixteen days, ripples had appeared nonstop in Western Ring Nebula, which was why all the cultivators in that galaxy had been terrified and did not dare to move out of their planets. Because of this, everywhere Su Ming had passed during these sixteen days had been very quiet.

He liked this type of silence.

Western Ring Nebula was rather far from Black Ink Planet. Unless his Ecang clone ventured out, he would be unable to get there within a short period of time with his own speed.

However, once the bald crane woke up and used the Divinity Incarceration Rune which had been reactivated, their speed became much faster.

According to Su Ming's estimations, he would need about six years before he could see Black Ink Planet.

However, before he left for Black Ink Planet, he still had one more thing to do. Once he settled this, he would no longer have many burdens left in Western Ring Nebula.

Three more days passed. On the nineteenth day since Su Ming had left Western Ring Nebula's foreign land, he opened his eyes slowly while seated on the coffin.

At the instant he did so, a planet appeared before him. That planet was dark red, like the color of a ball of flame that was about to die.

"Crimson Flame Planet..." Su Ming said softly.

"Crimson Flame Planet... so we've returned to this place."

The Duke of Crimson Flame had a rather sentimental expression on his face. In the blink of an eye, one thousand years had passed. When he thought back on the things that had happened, a slightly dazed expression appeared on his face.

The bald crane gradually shrank. At the instant the crimson coffin closed in on Crimson Flame Planet, it returned to its normal size and landed in front of Su Ming before sticking its head outward.

Boom!

The red coffin descended straight into Crimson Flame Planet. At the instant it touched the highest layer of wind in the planet, a sea of flame that was born due to the friction spread out in an arc in front of the coffin.

A strong gust of hot wind crashed into Su Ming's face. That wind was strong enough to crush all cultivators in Heaven Cultivation Realm. In fact, a normal cultivator in the initial stage of World Plane Realm would need to use Enchanted Treasures for some extra protection; they could not use their physical bodies alone to touch it. However, Su Ming remained calm. The hot wind blew against his body and lifted his hair, but did not manage to move him even in the slightest.

He watched quietly as the ground gradually grew bigger in front of him, watched as the mountain ranges, ravines, plains, and volcanoes grew larger before his eyes.

He continued watching until a booming sound echoed in the air. The coffin on which Su Ming sat shot through the highest layer of wind in the place, and the hot air immediately became weaker, though it still existed. However, it was no longer able to harm cultivators. It would only cause them to feel uncomfortable.

As he breathed in the familiar hot air and looked at the familiar ground, Su Ming could not help but remember his past self from one thousand years ago, when he had just appeared in Crimson Flame Planet.

He sighed softly. As his body remained in midair, ripples spread out from him, and he disappeared along with the coffin.

When he reappeared, Su Ming stood on a dried-up piece of land. It was empty all around him, without a single person to be seen. It was clear that the place where he was located was a rather remote area.

He looked at the ground. This place was the spot where he had lain when he was shifted to this place from Yin Death Region. It was also in this place that he met Yue Hong Bang.

He remained silent for a moment. Just as he was about to leave, Su Ming saw the bald crane digging by the side. He remembered that this spot was the place where it had turned into a stone in the past. As he watched, he saw that once the bald crane dug out a small pit in that spot, it brought out three crystals.

"Heh heh, I knew they would still be here. I knew it, I'm a smart crane. I hid these three crystals here in the past just to be on the safe side. Since we're now passing by this place, I might as well take them away.

"Let me think whether I should take away the crystals I hid away in the other places as well..."

That smug expression, that act of immediately taking away the crystals with excitement, and especially those murmurs made Su Ming's understanding towards the bald crane's love for money to become even greater.

He then stopped paying any attention to the bald crane and cast a look at the Duke of Crimson Flame. When he saw the nostalgic look on his face as he looked at the ground, Su Ming knew what the Duke of Crimson Flame was thinking of, and he sent a thought to the old man.

The Duke of Crimson Flame lifted his head and looked at Su Ming before he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to him. Then, he turned around and disappeared to head to the place that had sealed him in the past.

After the Duke of Crimson Flame left, Su Ming took a step forward and left as well, leaving the bald crane alone in that place as it was still thinking about whether it should take away all of its crystals.

When Su Ming reappeared, he was standing before a small hill. He looked at it. There was a cave abode in there, and beyond it were an endless amount of densely packed blue stones. At first glance, there was no end to them.

However, this place was already covered in dust. It had been a long time since anyone came to this place. The cave abode had also been deserted. Someone had destroyed the cave from within. It might still look like a hill, but in truth, this place was already ridden with wounds.

Or else someone would have definitely occupied this place after it was abandoned for so many years.

This cave abode had belonged to Qi Bei Shan in the past, and those blue stones were items that Su Ming had asked Yue Hong Bang to find for him one thousand years ago.

'So many blue stones... Hundreds of years must have been used to gather this amount. I wonder how is Yue Hong Bang now, and is the Crimson Python Phoenix still around...?'

Su Ming shook his head. As he spread his divine sense outwards, he covered the entire Crimson Flame Planet. After some time, Su Ming found that he could not find any traces of the Crimson Python Phoenixes.

They had clearly left this place.

However, Su Ming did find Yue Hong Bang.

To the northeast was a continuous stretch of mountains, one of which towered all the others. That mountain was crimson, and was clearly not any ordinary mountain. Instead, it was a volcano whose magma had already cooled.

There was a karst cave within the frozen magma at the foot of the volcano, but it was filled with putrid water. The water was black, and there were even bubbles appearing in it, as if it was boiling.

In that puddle of water was a man, submerged up to his chest.

His arms were pierced through by chains, and those chains were connected to the walls on both sides of the cave. Waves of sealing power constantly seeped into the man's body through the chains. As they suppressed his power, they also delivered excruciating torment upon him.

The man's hair was a mess and his body was thin. He looked disheveled and incredibly pathetic. His eyes were closed, and his face was covered in rotting wounds. There were maggots squirming about in them, so anyone who saw him would not be able to resist vomiting on the side.

That man did not know how many years it had been since he was submerged in this place. In fact, most of his body in the puddle of water had already decayed. However, his life force hadn't yet dispersed. There was still a hint of it left. Clearly, this was done intentionally by someone because they did not want him to die.

The man did not move. If it was not because there was still a hint of life within him, it would be incredibly easy to think that he was a corpse. Occasionally, waves of power would spread out from him. These waves... did not belong to those in Heaven Cultivation Realm, but were... waves of power in World Plane Realm.

He was a Lord of World Plane!

He might only be in the initial stage of World Plane Realm, but there was no mistaking this presence.

Footsteps arrived from the area outside. After a moment, the light from an oil lamp approached him. It was a young man dressed in black. Once he placed the oil lamp by the side, he sat down cross-legged beyond the puddle of water and looked at the man who was sealed.

"Have you thought this through?"

The hanging man did not move, and neither did he say anything. He merely kept his eyes closed and his head lowered.

"That person has already disappeared for one thousand years and hasn't showed up from Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. He is already dead, so why are you still protecting a dead man's secret?"

"As long as you say it, my Master will immediately let you go. In fact, with your level of cultivation, you will immediately become one of the three masters of Crimson Flame Planet, an existence that can be on equal ground with senior Mei Lan."

The man still did not move, as if he was dead.

"Even if he isn't dead, so what? He's trapped in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land, and it's impossible for him to venture out. Even if he does, he has the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds going after his life. He'll be too busy fending for himself, so why are you still protecting his secret?"

"Tell me why Mo Su gathered the blue stones in the past. Tell me how he absorbed the power within the blue stones and made his physical body so strong!"

"Tell me and you'll be free. If you don't tell me, you'll continue being sealed in this place and live while enduring a fate worse than death!" The young man's face twisted into a ferocious expression as he shouted at the man.

The man's head moved slightly, and he slowly lifted his head, revealing a face that was riddled with scars. He opened his eyes and stared fixedly at the young man with his dull eyes.

"Your Master has already searched through my soul. If he didn't manage to find an answer like that, I have nothing to say to him either." There was a deep-seated hatred laced in that voice, and his words tumbled out of his mouth as if he was gnashing his teeth while speaking. The atmosphere between them instantly became gloomy.

"Hmph, that's because you have a method to protect your memories. If it wasn't because you knew Mo Su's secret, how could you have become a Lord of World Plane from a mere cultivator in Heaven Cultivation Realm within such a short period of time?" The young man's face remained ferocious as he stared at Yue Hong Bang. After a long while, he swung his arm, turned around, and left with the oil lamp.

His expression was dark. In his heart, he remembered that his Master had assigned him to this place to keep watch over the prisoner. Master's birthday was near, and he originally wanted to obtain an answer from Yue Hong Bang as a present, but the man continued to refuse saying anything, and he decided that once he celebrated his Master's birthday, he would think of some other ways to torture Yue Hong Bang.

Yue Hong Bang watched the young man leave and gradually closed his eyes. He did not know of Su Ming's secret, but the young man refused to believe in this sort of thing, because Yue Hong Bang had indeed become a Lord of a World Plane within a short period of time, but that was his own secret. If he told it to the young man, he would die.

If that was the case, it would be better if he did not say anything, then perhaps he would have a chance of survival.

Chapter 854: Yue Hong Bang's Liege

Yue Hong Bang sighed and closed his eyes again. He knew that the torture he would have to suffer would only increase, but he was confident that the other would not let him die, because when he died, there would truly be no secrets left in him.

However, besides doing this, he could really not think of any other way. If he said it, he would die, and if he did not, he could survive, but the pain of living would make him feel as if his will was about to disperse.

At the instant he closed his eyes, an indifferent voice suddenly spoke airily in the karst cave.

"Just what sort of secret do you have?"

Yue Hong Bang instinctively remained silent and ignored that voice. He thought that the youth had come once again, but suddenly, his body trembled, because that voice did not belong to the young man, but to a person that he knew a long time ago.

At the instant Yue Hong Bang shuddered, the voice spoke once again.

"It's been many years since we last met, and you've become a Lord of a World Plane. Congratulations are in order."

Yue Hong Bang's body trembled, and he opened his eyes to see a young man in white standing before him. That young man had gray hair and a handsome face, but the ancient air about him could not be hidden. That young man... was looking at him calmly at that moment.

"My... My Liege?" Yue Hong Bang trembled even more furiously. He could almost not believe what he saw, but the person's face and expression were the exact same as those from long ago.

Because of it, he became even more certain that this was not a hallucination, but he remembered clearly that Mo Su had been forced into Western Ring Nebula's foreign land one thousand years ago, and only a handful of people could survive that place during the endless passage of time.

"This is payment for what you did for me in the past," Su Ming said flatly, and he lifted his right hand to swing it at Yue Hong Bang. Immediately, the chains on his arms shattered inch by inch with loud cracking sounds. Before they fell into the puddle of water, they turned into ashes.

In fact, even the puddle of water in which Yue Hong Bang had been submerged in dried up and revealed his body, which no longer looked like that of a human.

Su Ming cast a glance at Yue Hong Bang's wretched body, and though his expression remained as calm as ever, he let out a cold harrumph in his heart. Yue Hong Bang was

an intelligent person, and he was skilled at seizing the right opportunity. He knew when to take action, and when not to.

This sort of person would usually have a lot of selfish motives. When he acknowledged Su Ming as his lord in the past, he did so to obtain Su Ming's protection. He had even spared no pains and killed most of his companions without leaving any trace to prevent anyone else from discovering the secret that he was a first-generation criminal in this place.

Because of that, he became the only person who knew about Su Ming, and he also preserved a path of escape for himself after he acknowledged Su Ming as his lord. In fact, to obtain Su Ming's trust, he had given Su Ming the Enchanted Vessel he used to protect his life to show his firm loyalty.

This sort of vicious and ambitious person was usually disliked by others, but that was mostly by those who could not stop such them. Jealousy would rise within them, and they would not want this sort of person to exist beside them. They would constantly think that such a person was a lurking threat.

However, in Su Ming's eyes, this person had been very obedient while following him, and even if he left, from the number of blue stones, he could tell that this person had continued obeying his orders for hundreds of years. It was also clear that he had stopped only because he was imprisoned in this place.

That was why it did not matter to Su Ming how this person was. It did not matter to him whether he was ambitious or spiteful. He was obedient, and that was enough, but this obedient person had been tortured to this state. Su Ming might not pity or have compassion for the treatment he received these hundreds of years, but he was a person who protected those close to him.

"I will not allow anyone to harm those who are mine as they please," Su Ming said flatly, and he swung his right hand at Yue Hong Bang once again.

With it, Yue Hong Bang, who had fallen to the side, immediately felt a wave of life force surge into his body. Flesh and blood instantly grew on him, and in the blink of an eye, he discovered to his shock that his body had recovered instantaneously. In fact, his cultivation base had become even more refined and profound. A presence which belonged to the initial stage of World Plane Realm erupted with a bang from within him.

Yue Hong Bang lowered his head to look at his own body. He clenched his fists, and a feeling that he had control over great power rose madly in his heart. This sort of strength was something that he had never possessed. The refreshing and relaxing feeling of having life force fill his entire body formed a stark contrast to the torment he had suffered for hundreds of years, causing him to be barely able to constrain the instinct to lift his head and roar.

He looked at Su Ming excitedly, but the emotion in the depths of his heart was completely different from the expression on his face. Su Ming had become so powerful that Yue Hong Bang was terrified of him. With just a swing of his arm, Su Ming had healed him, and killing was a much easier act compared to healing someone. From this alone, it was clear that Su Ming only needed to swing his arm to kill him.

"Thank you for saving me, My Liege!" Without any hesitation, Yue Hong Bang immediately knelt down and worshiped Su Ming. The excited expression was put on his face for Su Ming to see, and his trembling body was his respect, which he could not suppress.

"I heard that someone intends to hold a feast to celebrate his birthday. Come with me to take a look," Su Ming said calmly, then turned around to walk to the entrance of the cave. Yue Hong Bang quickly followed behind him, his heart racing in his chest. He had understood what Su Ming meant, and a powerful desire filled his heart. He had suffered for hundreds of years, and now, he was finally going to make the other pay.

'Zhao Guang You, I will make it so that you won't be celebrating your birthday!'

Mountain ranges rose and fell. Not far away from the mountain where Yue Hong Bang was sealed was another one. At that moment, there were many voices talking at once at that place. Most of the cultivators in Crimson Flame Planet had arrived and were waiting to present their gifts during the birthday celebration three days later.

This was the birthday feast of the strongest person in Crimson Flame Planet at that moment. That person had suddenly come to Crimson Flame Planet one thousand years ago. With the power of a cultivator at the peak of the initial stage of World Plane Realm, he overpowered Mei Lan with brute strength and sealed Yue Hong Bang, who had just become a Lord of a World Plane. With a single move, he became the strongest in the planet, occupying the land and building his sect there.

From then on, this place practically became the sacred land in Crimson Flame Planet.

At that moment, Su Ming was strolling confidently up the stairs up the mountain where the sect was located, heading straight to the top. He looked at the cloudy sky and the mountain range in the distance with his usual calm expression.

Yue Hong Bang was behind Su Ming with an incredibly respectful face as he followed with his head bowed.

The two of them were not walking quickly. On their way up, they saw quite a number of cultivators sitting around the area meditating. These cultivators were located in various parts of the mountain range and were waiting for the birthday feast three days later.

As Su Ming and Yue Hong Bang walked over, several cultivators who were sitting cross-legged were speaking to each other in low murmurs, but when one of them cast

their gaze casually to the side, he was suddenly taken aback when he saw Yue Hong Bang behind Su Ming.

Only when Su Ming and Yue Hong Bang were already in the distance did he let out a cry of surprise.

"Yue... Yue Hong Bang! That person just now was Yue Hong Bang!"

"What? Yue Hong Bang? Wasn't he imprisoned and sealed by Sir Zhao Guang You hundreds of years ago?!"

As that person spoke, the expressions of the cultivators by his side immediately changed. When they looked over, they could only see Su Ming and Yue Hong Bang's backs.

Gradually, more people noticed Yue Hong Bang walking to the top of the mountain. After all, this person was a local of Crimson Flame Planet, so it was difficult for them to forget him in just a few hundred years. Slowly, a commotion rose up, and as it spread among the people, more learned of what was happening.

"It's indeed Yue Hong Bang, but who... who is that person in front of him?"

"Judging by how Yue Hong Bang is behaving, the person in front of him deserves extreme respect. That person... why is he somewhat familiar?"

"I find him somewhat familiar as well, but I can't remember where I've seen him before... But if Yue Hong Bang is so respectful towards him, then this person... Ah! I remember now!"

"Mo Su! He's... Mo Su!!"

In an instant, when someone mentioned Mo Su's name, a loud buzz went through the mountain range as everyone began speaking. The shock that came straight from the depths of their bodies and souls caused all the people to think of far too many things. They remembered the scenes from one thousand years ago, as well as the commotion that was brought upon the entire Western Ring Nebula due to this.

"Something big is about to happen. Sir Mo Su is Yue Hong Bang's liege, and Sir Zhao Guang You imprisoned Yue Hong Bang for hundreds of years. Sir Mo Su has returned now, and they will definitely have a dispute over this!"

"I didn't expect that Sir Mo Su would actually manage to walk out of Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. This... This will definitely shock the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping a lookout over this place, it'll definitely cause a new disaster in Sinful Barren Lands!"

Long arcs swiftly rose into the air and charged towards the direction where Su Ming and Yue Hong Bang were at the top of the mountain, but they did not dare to come to close to them. They still remembered how Mo Su from one thousand years ago had killed countless people. It was said that wherever he went, he would cause planets to collapse, and none of the cultivators in those planets survived.

At that moment, at the top of the sect built in the mountain was a hall on a piece of rock. Crimson Flame Planet's strongest person, Zhao Guang You, was sitting on a big chair. He was dressed in a long robe with dashes of blue and white on it, and he appeared to be a middle-aged man, but his face was filled with pitted scars, making him look rather ugly. He was looking at the eight young men in front of him.

These eight people were the disciples he took under his wing in Crimson Flame Planet. All of them were incredibly handsome. As he looked at them, a strange light appeared in the depths of Zhao Guang You's eyes.

"Master, more than three thousand people came to send you gifts. There are still more coming as well. After all, this is a major event that causes a stir in the entire Crimson Flame Planet. Master, I hope to wish you in advance that you will have endless years and you will live throughout the ages."

With his disciples wishes upon him, Zhao Guang You laughed loudly and swept his gaze across them before fixing his eyes on the last person among the eight.

"Has Yue Hong Bang spoken?"

"Master, that person... That person still hasn't said anything. It's my fault for being so worthless." The young man whom Zhao Guang You was looking at lowered his head. Naturally, he was the young man who had appeared before Yue Hong Bang earlier.

At the instant he said those words, uproars and the sound of something breaking suddenly came from outside the hall. The noise that rose and fell was incredibly strong.

Zhao Guang You frowned.

"What is going—" Before Zhao Guang You could finish speaking, a loud bang rang out beyond the hall. As the sound shook the ground, a sinister voice rushed into the hall.

"Zhao Guang You, I'll never forget how you treated me during those hundreds of years. We will settle our matter later. Today, my liege has arrived, now come out and pay your respects to him!"

This was Yue Hong Bang's voice. In an instant, the expressions of the eight young men in the hall changed at the same time, while Zhao Guang You let out a cold harrumph.

"Your liege? I didn't even know that you had a liege!" As Zhao Guang You took a step forward, he turned into a long arc and looked as if he was just about to fly out of the hall, but during that instant, his expression suddenly changed drastically, because he had just remembered the liege Yue Hong Bang spoke about.

Based on what he knew, Yue Hong Bang had only one liege, and he was... Mo Su, the man for whom the four Great True Worlds had offered a reward, and the man Zhao Guang You had once joined a group to hunt down. However, he had been scared away by the amount of blood the other had spilled.

Chapter 855: Temperamental

Zhao Guang You remembered clearly that because he had been late to the fight one thousand years ago in Heavenly Treasure Planet, he had been outside the ocean of wind as he witnessed the crazed slaughter.

Those in Heaven Cultivation Realm all died, and plenty of other cultivators didn't leave alive either. Aside from that one cultivator in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, it was as if every other person had to die before Mo Su.

The sight of a hunter turning into a hunted had shocked Zhao Guang You. If he had not reacted to the situation quickly enough and decisively chosen to immediately leave Heavenly Treasure Planet, he would have probably been one of those who had died as well.

Heavenly Treasure Planet had been torn to pieces and reduced to ashes, but under that terrifying strike, Mo Su had once again appeared in Western Ring Nebula, and the shock it brought to Zhao Guang You was incredibly great.

He was one of the very few people who had managed to survive after witnessing Su Ming's attack, that was why after the other was forced into Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands, he chose to come to Crimson Flame Planet.

He saw the might of Su Ming's physical body and wanted to search for the reason behind it. He had heard about Su Ming gathering blue stones in Crimson Flame Planet to absorb them, and he tried to do it as well, but failed.

However, he was the first powerful warrior to arrive in Crimson Flame Planet, and was also the first to imprison Yue Hong Bang. From then on, there were quite a few powerful warriors who came to Crimson Flame Planet in search for the reason behind Su Ming's strength, but they were the same as him and did not obtain any answers.

As one thousand years passed, fewer people came, and it was especially so during the last few hundred years. Practically no one came to this place. It was as if Mo Su's name had already been forgotten.

Zhao Guang You did not harbor any hope anymore. The imprisonment of Yue Hong Bang had been without much purpose, just because he was a reminder. After all, if Zhao Guang You had still cared about it, he wouldn't have thrown the task of watching that place to his disciple. In his heart, he saw no point to it anymore. He had already done everything that he could do, but he still did not obtain any answer.

In fact, in his mind, Crimson Flame Planet was a good place, and he had already decided to stay here for long, which was why he had built his sect here and taken in disciples.

However, he did not expect that he would run into Mo Su here, the man who had terrified him in the past. This was something he never thought about. In his mind, all those who stepped into the foreign lands were dead men, since it was so rare to see anyone walk out alive. In fact, even if they managed to come out, they required at least several thousands or ten thousand years to do so.

Even if Mo Su managed to come out, he would definitely be cautious, because the four Great True Worlds had yet to cancel his bounty. If they could chase him down the first time, then they could do so a second time, and all the times after.

Yet now... only one thousand years had passed.

Yet now... this person had appeared in Crimson Flame Planet in such a brazen manner!

Almost at the instant he registered what was going on in his head, Zhao Guang You's expression changed rapidly. His body came to an abrupt halt just as he was about to fly out of the hall, and he turned around to immediately change his direction and retreat.

He did not fly out of the entrance. Instead, as he retreated, he shot up and rushed straight towards the roof of the hall with a bang. In the mid of that booming sound, he tore through a hole in the hall and charged out from within.

Dim sunlight scattered on the ground. At the moment Zhao Guang You appeared on the roof, the first thing he saw were the thousands of cultivators standing close to each other far away from the area, and immediately after, he saw Yue Hong Bang, who was not only healed, but was also standing with all of his cultivation base restored and refined.

Then, he saw... a figure that made his heart tremble furiously, and the one thread of hope remaining in his heart wishing that he would be lucky was shredded to pieces.

The figure was dressed in white and had gray hair as he stood there allowing the mountain breeze to blow against his robes. His face was handsome, but exuded an ancient air, and he was naturally the person whom Zhao Guang You found impossible to forget, and who was buried deep in his memories after terrifying him all those years ago - Su Ming!

"I see, so it's you." Su Ming placed his hands behind his back as he stood at the top of the mountain. The booming sounds from the roof of the hall echoed in his ears as he looked at the person who had flown out. Su Ming had seen this person before. He was one of the cultivators who had fled from Heavenly Treasure Planet from fright.

At the moment he heard Su Ming's words, Zhao Guang You felt his skin crawl, and he was almost terrified out of his wits, because at the instant he heard Su Ming's voice and looked over, a loud bang rang out in his heart, and his mind went blank. The only thing that remained in his head were Su Ming's eyes.

Those were a pair of eyes that shocked him. It was as if they could suck away his soul and make him lose his consciousness. In fact, he could feel that Su Ming could damn him for eternity with just one thought.

This was an incredibly distinct feeling, and it was clearer to Zhao Guang You than anything before.

'He's not in the initial stage of World Plane Realm. He-he's definitely different from one thousand years ago. He couldn't make my heart tremble with just one gaze back then. He... Just what sort of serendipity did he obtain in the foreign land?'

Zhao Guang You's body trembled, and right after, without even having time to speak, he swayed and coughed up a mouthful of blood. It turned instantly into blood mist, and he chose to flee without even fighting.

This was not any ordinary form of escaping either. This was a frenzied escape where he flung all caution to the wind and even injured himself to execute an Art that allowed him to instantaneously reach the horizon.

Since he was a cultivator at the peak of the initial stage of World Plane Realm, the thousands of spectators burst into a commotion due to his actions. They had originally expected a great battle. After all, in their eyes, while Su Ming was strong, Zhao Guang You had been a supreme existence during the hundreds of years that were nearing a thousand he was in Crimson Flame Planet. That was why in their minds, Zhao Guang You's strength was not to be questioned. However, the scene unfolding before their eyes immediately overturned their beliefs.

"Paragon Zhao is... He's running away?"

"He's definitely thinking about executing a powerful divine ability in the sky. It's impossible for him to immediately run without even attacking."

"Nonsense. He's clearly running away. Sir Mo Su is so strong that he can make a cultivator in the initial stage of World Plane Realm choose to not fight but flee by sacrificing his blood."

The thousands of cultivators in the area were not the only ones shocked by this. Zhao Guang You's eight disciples in the hall also had their mouths hanging open in shock. They stared at Zhao Guang You turning into a ray of blood-red light that fled madly into the sky from the hole that appeared on the roof in the hall. Their Master, who was an incredibly powerful existence in their hearts... was running away pathetically.

In fact, he looked as if he did not even dare to say a single word. It caused the shock in the eight disciples hearts to change into astonishment and fear, especially that of the young man who had kept an eye on Yue Hong Bang. His face had instantly turned pale.

When Yue Hong Bang saw that Zhao Guang You was about to disappear, anxiety appeared in his heart, but he did not dare to chase after him rashly. It was not because he was afraid of Zhao Guang You, but because Su Ming had not said even a single word by his side.

"He's a clever one, at least," Su Ming remarked flatly. This person had escaped the disaster in Heavenly Treasure Planet with that intelligent mind of his, but he should not have set his eyes on Su Ming.

Su Ming did not do much. His left eye only shone once, and immediately, the mark of the palm which he had formed in his left eye through the epiphany he had gained after he survived the attack of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death disappeared.

In the next breath, the sky roared, and the dim heavens tumbled about to reveal a sight that caused all those who saw it in the area to cry out together in surprise. Zhao Guang You's eight disciples also looked as if they had instantly lost all their strength, and despair appeared on their faces.

Even Yue Hong Bang's breathing quickened when he saw this scene. As his pupils shrank, his heart filled with shock and disbelief.

At that moment, as the clouds tumbled about and ripples were formed in the sky, a huge palm replaced the sky and appeared before everyone's eyes.

There was no end to this palm, and it completely replaced the sky, making it seem as if there was a giant standing in the galaxy, right outside Crimson Flame Planet, and he was striking the planet with his palm.

The sky rumbled, and the heavens twisted. The gigantic palm was Su Ming's epiphany. At that moment, the epiphany gained form, and the palm descended as if it was falling from the sky. As it pressed down, it looked as if a sea of fire had risen up due to friction, causing the sky to burn.

As the palm swiftly descended, a loud bang rang out in the sky. The fleeing Zhao Guang You's body formed from the blood-red light. His face was distorted in shock. With a piercing scream, his body plunged down as he tried to avoid the palm from seizing him.

Su Ming shook his head. The understanding he had was still not enough. The palm only possessed an outline and did not have much power. It was impossible for it to be compared with that of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, but its appearance could be used to scare others.

"Kill him."

Su Ming averted his gaze from the sky. When he spoke lightly, killing intent shone in Yue Hong Bang's eyes. He had been waiting a long time ago for Su Ming's orders. At that moment, he let out a prolonged shout towards the sky and rose up, turning into a long arc that charged towards Zhao Guang You, who had been shaken by the palm in the sky and was currently retreating.

"That person is already scared out of his wits. He might be slightly stronger than you, but he won't be able to bring out his full power. I will give you the span of ten breaths. If he doesn't die by then, you will die with him. I do not need weaklings under my wing."

Su Ming's voice was calm, but there was a ruthless tone within it that caused Yue Hong Bang's heart to tremble. He did not suspect the truth of that statement at all. Once he witnessed Su Ming's strength, he once again remembered the other impression Su Ming had left in his mind all those years ago.

Temperamental.

His heart shuddered, and Yue Hong Bang clenched his teeth tightly. His eyes immediately turned bloodshot, and with a low growl, he rushed towards Zhao Guang You. He had to give everything he had in this fight. If he did not manage to kill this person within ten breaths, then he himself would die with the other. This was not something he could choose, and neither did he have time to dawdle. Even if he would be severely injured, he had to kill Zhao Guang You.

In this bout of madness, besides respect, he also felt terror towards Su Ming from the depths of his heart. This terror would accompany him for the rest of his lives, and it would not leave.

'Is this how the superior are...? There were four superiors recorded in Yue Family's scrolls, and the experiences of the older generations of the family while dealing with them were recorded in the scrolls as well. The first was a forthright person, and the second a somber one. Yue Family's Progenitor was that somber person. This sort of person was easier to serve, since those who are forthright are easier to get close to. The third was temperamental, and the fourth was also temperamental. The first of the two pretended to be emotionally volatile, and the second... was born this way. It didn't matter which sort of temperamental person they were, they were incredibly difficult to serve.' Yue Hong Bang's heart was filled with anguish, but he did not have time to think much about this at that moment. With red eyes, he closed in on Zhao Guang You.

Su Ming closed his eyes. He did not pay any attention to the battle in the sky.

Time passed. Booming sounds echoed in the air, and eventually, during the tenth breath, a shrill scream of pain traveled through the air. When Su Ming opened his eyes, Yue Hong Bang returned to him with a head whose face was filled with despair. It looked as if there was fire burning on Yue Hong Bang's body, and there were many parts of him that had turned into a bloody mess. When he knelt down on the ground, he coughed up a mouthful of blood. There was a dispirited look on his pale face.

It was clear that he had only won after burning his cultivation base, gave it his all, and executed his family's strongest divine ability.

At the moment he knelt down, one word echoed in the deepest recesses of his mind.

'Temperamental...'

Chapter 856: Who Is It?

"When I appear in your memories once again, you will remember me, and you will then truly become my subordinate." Su Ming raised his right hand and tapped the center of Yue Hong Bang's brows.

Yue Hong Bang's injuries were immediately healed, but a dazed expression appeared in his eyes, and he slowly fell to the ground.

Su Ming swung his right hand, and a gentle gust of wind immediately swept through the area. It gushed forth in a manner as if there was nothing in the world that could stop this wind spreading out. It did not matter whether it was mountain ranges or cave abodes, all the geographical structures in the land with cultivators around seemed as if they were just illusions.

All the cultivators that the piercing wind touched instantly began shuddering no matter what their levels of cultivation were. A dazed look appeared in their eyes. All their impressions and memories about Su Ming vanished into the wind.

As the cultivators fell on the ground unconscious. In the blink of an eye, Su Ming became the only person who remained standing in the mountain range.

The wind continued spreading out. With this place as the center, the wind spread through the entire Crimson Flame Planet. This was a windstorm aiming to wipe off all memories regarding Su Ming, as if he had never existed in Crimson Flame Planet no matter whether it was the past or the present.

In fact, even those who had died and were now soul fragments drifting in the world had their fragmented memories wiped off. The parts in their minds where those memories had existed turned into blank slates.

As the windstorm swept outwards and spread out continuously, Su Ming took a step towards the sky. With it, he disappeared. When he reappeared, he was standing on a mountain.

There was a small house made of stone at the top, and an old woman was sitting cross-legged in there. She stared at the door of her house. There was a dismal expression on her face, as if she was waiting for something.

Su Ming walked forward, and when he arrived outside the house, the wind he had stirred up earlier had already swept past most of Crimson Flame Planet. In another few breaths, it would cover the entire planet.

Su Ming pushed open the door to the house, and the door swung open with a creak. He did not go in, but stood outside the house. His gaze met the old woman's.

"You still came here, in the end." The old woman was Mei Lan, and she was also the source for the creation of the Blood Identification Pearls when the four Great True Worlds extracted her memories.

"I'm here." As Su Ming spoke calmly, he walked into the stone house and sat on a chair by the side.

"I'll thank you if you allow me to die in a more dignified manner." The old woman closed her eyes. Once she finished saying these words, she stilled.

Five breaths later, the windstorm finally covered the entire Crimson Flame Planet, and all the cultivators in the planet forgot about Su Ming, their memories taken by the wind. This was an irreversible erasure of their memories, and they would not be able to recover it.

Crimson Flame Planet was the start of Su Ming's journey in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, that was why certain mysterious aspects had appeared in the planet, such as the possibility of forming the Blood Identification Pearl through the memories of the people in this place.

When Su Ming eventually left Crimson Flame Planet, all those who had once seen him would no longer be able to form the Blood Identification Pearl through their memories about him. This divine ability was related to the power of Plane Kalpa Realm, and the mysteries contained within it could not be described with words.

Once the windstorm spread through the entire Crimson Flame Planet and gradually vanished to allow the planet to return to a state of peace while all the cultivators remained in deep sleep, Su Ming walked out of the house. He cast a final glance at Crimson Flame Planet and turned around to stroll towards the sky.

Gradually, a crimson coffin manifested around him. Su Ming stepped on it and walked into space. Two long arcs flew up from the ground. One of them was the Duke of Crimson Flame, and the other was the bald crane. They caught up to Su Ming... and vanished into space with him.

"Damn it all, those jerks! I've hidden crystals in about seven to ten thousand places, but they... they... the crystals in two spots where I hid them were gone... I can't believe it!

"I'm so frustrated! I absolutely can't hide crystals anymore, it's not safe, and it's far too easy for me to lose them. My heart hurts, Su Ming! My heart really hurts!" The bald crane had an expression that its heart was aching terribly, and by the looks of it, it was not pretending. It was really feeling that its heart was bleeding from emotional pain.

Its hurt lasted for so long that the bald crane still had a distressed expression on its face and looked as if it was in anguish even after Su Ming left, as if it had lost the most precious thing in its life.

Ten breaths after Su Ming left Crimson Flame Planet, the first to open his eyes was Yue Hong Bang. A perplexed look appeared in his eyes, as if he knew that something had happened, but when he thought about it carefully, he found that there was a person missing in his memories.

That person's figure was indistinct, and no matter how hard he tried, he could not remember him. When he lowered his head, he saw Zhao Guang You's head in his hand.

Soon after, more people woke up, but all of them were the same as Yue Hong Bang. There was a person missing in their memories, along with his name.

On a mountain in a stone house was an old woman sitting cross-legged inside. She gradually opened her eyes, and there was a dazed look within them. After a moment, she sighed lightly.

"I can't remember."

She did not die.

Crimson Flame Planet still had its set trajectory, and it was still moving about that trajectory. However, in all of the people's memories, a series of events had been eternally wiped off. It was just as Su Ming had told Yue Hong Bang earlier, if Yue Hong Bang could remember, then he would truly become Su Ming's subordinate.

If he could not, then they would no longer have anything to do with each other.

.....

Su Ming sat cross-legged on the red coffin in the galaxy as he meditated with closed eyes. Time trickled by. One year, two years, three years, up till five years passed.

During the course of these five years, Su Ming headed swiftly towards Black Ink Planet. Occasionally, he would shift using the power of the Rune, increasing his travel speed by a lot.

As of then, he was almost at the borders of Black Ink Planet. With just a little more time, he would be able to enter its area. The amount of time they spent getting to this place was slightly shorter than what Su Ming had expected.

The Blood Identification Pearls had lost their effect, so no one could track Su Ming any longer. The bald crane had also fused with the Divinity Incarceration Rune, so that particular method of using the Rune to track him down no longer posed a threat to him as well.

Perhaps only if a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death covered the entire Western Ring Nebula with their will would they possibly be able to find Su Ming. However, he did not run into any True Guards on his way to Black Ink Planet, and neither did he hear the four Great True Worlds mentioning anything about him again.

Su Ming was well-aware of why it was so.

During his trip to the region where the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World keeping a lookout over Western Ring Nebula were stationed, Su Ming had killed Dao Ren and demonstrated his might. He also managed to survive after a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death chased him down, and had even caused a stir in the entire galaxy.

He refused to believe that they did not know who he was. Even if Dao Ren, who recognized him, had died, Wu Li Zi was still around. True Sacred Yin World must already know that he was the Mo Su that they had chased after in the past.

'So they've given silent consent to my continued existence, huh?' Su Ming opened his eyes.

'Or are they gathering up a new storm...? No matter what, the feud between me and the four Great True Worlds hasn't ended.' With a calm expression on his face, Su Ming closed his eyes once again.

He might have done so, but it was not silent around him. During these past five years, Su Ming had come to know just how good the bald crane was at talking nonstop.

"My heart hurts... Oh, my heart hurts. Su Ming, my heart hurts! Say, I've hidden them so well, you know, so why did the crystals in two spots go missing...? Nine of them went missing, just like that..." The bald crane's voice traveled through the air, and the crane sounded as if it was beating its chest in anguish.

The Duke of Crimson Flame quickly closed his eyes and pretended he did not hear anything.

"I've lived a pitiful life of saving up by cutting down my expenses, of running about searching for crystals. I've worked hard and kept constant vigilance over these years, but... but why did I lose them...? I can't accept this. This is the first time I lost my crystals, my heart aches..."

"Su Ming, my heart is already hurting so much, why aren't you giving me a response?" Even after chattering away for half a day, the bald crane did not feel thirsty. It simply looked at Su Ming with eager eyes.

Su Ming ignored it.

"Su Ming, I burned my soul for you in the past. You still owe me one million crystals! Y-y-you... My heart is aching so much I can't handle it, and I need comfort, but you're not even speaking to me... My heart hurts..."

"I've given you eighty-six crystals during the past five years!" Su Ming frowned and opened his eyes to glare at the bald crane.

When the bald crane notice that Su Ming was responding, it was immediately filled with energy and even its fighting spirit began to burn, making it clear that it wanted to argue with him for a long, long time.

"That's not the same thing. If you gave those crystals to me, then those are the things you gave me, but the ones I lost... are forever lost. Even if I get ten billion crystals in the

future... I should actually have ten billion and nine crystals." The bald crane seized its chest, and based on its expression, it could be seen that this problem had been troubling it during the past five years.

Su Ming forced down the irritation that had risen in his heart after being tormented by the bald crane for five years and said flatly, "Then go and snatch nine crystals."

"But even if I snatch them, I would still have lost nine crystals."

"Then go steal some more."

"Even if I steal, I still would have lost them."

"Go pick some up!"

"Where to? Even if pick some up, I still would have lost them..." The bald crane put on a long face.

"Then what do you want to do?" Su Ming let out a long sigh. He could tell that the bald crane had not been making a fuss out of nothing during these five years, but was really troubled by this. To the bald crane, who would consider itself to have lost crystals if it did not see any when it ventured out, truly losing nine crystals would definitely be a disaster to it.

"Let's go back to Crimson Flame Planet. I want to search for them again. I swear I'll definitely find the person who stole my crystals." The bald crane ground its teeth in anger.

"We're almost at Black Ink Planet." Su Ming sighed again.

"I have a feeling that if we go to Black Ink Planet, I'm going to lose more crystals. This feeling is incredibly strong, very, very strong. The closer we get to Black Ink Planet, the stronger this feeling gets, and I can't stand it anymore..."

The bald crane was using every trick in its disposal to speak and emote with great feeling. It did not have any sort of premonition that made it feel like it was going to lose its crystals, but at that moment, it did not know that its nonsensical words right then would turn into a heartache very soon which would drive it crazy for the rest of its life.

"... Hmm? Who's that? What a familiar presence."

As the bald crane continued speaking, it was suddenly taken aback and let out a light gasp. It could sense all the things within a very large area, since it had fused with the Divinity Incarceration Rune.

A focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He fused his Atman into the bald crane's Divinity Incarceration Rune, and immediately, the large galaxy showed up clearly in his mind. In a place that was rather far away from where they were, Su Ming saw... a snake-like beast whose body was rotting away but was not dead struggling forward while filled with the aura of death.

By the looks of it, it was on the verge of death and already had one foot in its grave. Before long, it would die.

Behind it were hundreds of cultivators. There were moths under their feet, and they were chasing after it while letting out strange cries. These cultivators were dressed in rags, but there was a fierce light shining in their eyes. The person in the lead was a woman. She was thin and tiny, and there was dirt on her face, making it so that no one could see her true appearance. However, she was the fastest among them. There was a string of bells on her wrist, and every single time they swayed, the galaxy would distort and the beast before them would let out a pained roar.

At the instant Su Ming saw the snake-like beast, he was stunned.

Chapter 857: Xiao Huang

The Abyss Dragon let out a sad cry. It was exhausted, with little strength left in its body. After it had all of its power taken from it, its life after it was sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence had been filled with hardships during these past one thousand years. In fact, there were even a few times when it had nearly died because it was severely wounded.

It if was not because it still had some of its physical power left and the other Abyss Dragons going against the wills of their Progenitor and True Sacred Yin World by leaving it some methods to defend itself when it was banished to this place, it would have died a long time ago.

After all, the Dragon Tendon which gathered all its Qi and allowed it to possess great physical strength had been extracted from its body. Without the Dragon Tendon, it was as if it had been reduced from a dragon to a snake, and it had lost everything.

As of then, it could only bring out power that was equivalent to those in Man Cultivation Realm, and this was due to its people helping it in secret. During the thousand years, it struggled to live in agony, and from its initial refusal to yield, it had descended into despair.

The repeated escapes and roars at the heavens when it was alone filled its heart with madness and hatred. This madness was not against Yu Xuan, and the hate was not

aimed at the Berserkers in Yin Death Region, but was instead... aimed towards the Emperor of Abyss' True World... as well as the Abyss Dragons' Progenitor.

The dragon had risked death to bring Yu Xuan back, but had ended up in this state. It was loyal to the Abyss Dragons, but had its Dragon Tendon taken from its body. It was a creature that had prided itself for being a part of the Emperor of Abyss' True World, but had its power completely abrogated by that same Emperor of Abyss' True World.

It hated them!

Yet aside from hating them, it could do nothing else, because it did not have sufficient power. With a level of cultivation that was only equivalent to those in Man Cultivation Realm, it did not have enough strength to protect itself in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and since it had lost its Dragon Tendon, its level of cultivation had not increased during these one thousand years... no matter how hard it tried.

It could only have its life run its course in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

If it was not a dragon, then perhaps things would have been slightly better, perhaps things could still change and it would not have ended up this way. However, it could not transform and could only appear as a pathetic Abyss Dragon, and this, to many people in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, meant that its body was full of treasures.

Its flesh could provide nourishment to all those that ate it; its scales could be turned into an armor if someone gathered them together and fused their power or could be turned into Enchanted Treasure; its blood had the power of a spirit stone once it was dried; and its organs were the greatest supplement to cultivators.

Its bones were even more precious, for they could be turned into extremely powerful Enchanted Vessels.

Its brain could allow others to learn the Abyssal World's Arts if they gained an epiphany through it.

In fact, even its soul had its uses. If it was refined by a powerful warrior, it could be sealed in an Enchanted Treasure and turned into a Vessel Spirit.

It was a miracle that this Abyss Dragon that had no power to protect itself could survive for a thousand years.

During this time, the Abyss Dragon had thought about dying many times. From its initial fear and despair, it had gradually become apathetic, and in the end, death and living lost their importance to it. Compared to living in agony like this, it would be better to just die and gain freedom.

However, when such thoughts befell it, it always remembered the Abyss Dragon that helped it by quickly telling something before the banishment took place. There were numerous alien races within the galaxy behind Black Ink Planet. However... there was also a serendipity there that could turn something decaying into something miraculous. If there was a place which could allow its cultivation base to be restored in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... it would only be Divine Essence Star Ocean!

That was why during these one thousand years, the dragon had continued flying without stop, wanting to reach Black Ink Planet and head to Divine Essence Star Ocean.

However, all of this had now turned into a mere dream.

Yet there was still unwillingness to admit defeat in the depths of its heart. This refusal to give in was an obsession that not even time managed to take away. The dragon hated the Emperor of Abyss' True World and wanted to take revenge on that world. It wanted to return to the Abyss Dragons and win against the Abyss Dragons' Progenitor.

It also wanted... to meet its young mistress once more and hear her call its name.

However, it knew that this was impossible. Forget even being able to leave the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, this disaster of being chased by the cultivators alone was something it could not escape from.

The howling behind it continued nonstop. The weird shouts and killing intent had locked onto the dragon firmly. Its speed was not fast to begin with, and the people behind it had those moths under their feet. It... could not escape.

Its will gradually became clouded. The pain in its body made it unable to tell the source of the pain. It was as if there was not a single part in its body that did not ache. As blood poured from its body, the strange yells from the cultivators behind it became something that urged it forward, the echoes of the bells especially sounded as if they brought death in their wake.

The dragon still remembered that it had only wanted to rest for a little while when it passed by a floating group of meteors in the galaxy three days ago. It had not shown any ill-will, but the meteors actually served as a cave abode for a group of cultivators. When they appeared with those moths under their feet, the Abyss Dragon had even degraded itself by trying to curry their favor while begging to leave.

Yet what it got in exchange was a chase after its life that lasted for three days. It could tell from the desire and murderous light in the pursuers' eyes that they... had recognized that it was an Abyss Dragon, and they... wanted to devour it alive.

There were four Lords of World Planes among these cultivators and there was even one who was at the middle stage of World Plane Realm. Even when the Abyss Dragon was at the peak of its condition, it had never reached this state. When it was in Yin Death

Region, it had only attained completion in the initial stage of World Plane Realm. With its cultivation base and its physical body of an Abyss Dragon, it could have somewhat put up a fight against those in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, but it could not have won against them.

However, the powerful warrior in the middle stage of World Plane Realm had not personally joined in the chase. Instead, the other three cultivators in the initial stage of World Plane Realm had led nearly one hundred cultivators and initiated this hunt for its life that lasted for three days.

In truth, the Abyss Dragon could sense that they did not really need nearly one hundred people to chase it down. Any one of the three cultivators in the initial stage of World Plane Realm could kill it within an instant. In fact... most of the one hundred people could do so as well.

However... they did not do it. Instead, it was as if they were intentionally toying with it. They only chased after and forced it to continuously flee, so it would use up its strength. At this point, the dragon was like a dying ember, only instinctively escaping forward. It had already lost all power to fight back.

The strange cries in its ears sounded like mocking laughter. The bell chimes were like an illusion that made the Abyss Dragon's consciousness become increasingly more clouded.

Wherever it went, blood would spill into the galaxy. Its vision blurred, and its eyes were about to fall shut at any moment. The howling sounds were closing in from behind. Whenever its blood spilled, someone from the near one hundred cultivators would immediately fly out and use a jade bottle to pick it up.

Laughter came from the near one hundred cultivators behind the Abyss Dragon. The laughing was a young man who had just collected the dragon's blood, and he said with mirth towards the woman in front, who had the bells tied to her wrist. "Lady Yu Luo, the Abyss Dragon's consciousness is about to scatter. The hunt this time was very interesting."

"Abyss Dragons are incredibly precious in the Emperor of Abyss' True World, so it's difficult to find any who would venture out, much less enter the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It must have offended the influential powers in the Emperor of Abyss' True World and was banished to this place."

"That's right, it only has power equivalent to those in Man Cultivation Realm. During these three days, it was easy to see that its Dragon Tendon had been taken away. It's the same as a piece of trash."

"Haha! This isn't an Abyss Dragon, it's just a big snake. Lady Yu Luo, you're wise indeed. You made this snake continue running so its blood would circulate and the

effect from each drop that spilled would be better than if we extracted it forcefully. In fact, this sort of chase would force its consciousness to fade, and it'll become even easier for you to control it and refine it into a flying Enchanted Vessel. In the future, it'll be much easier for us to head out."

Laughter rang in space. The near one hundred cultivators saw that the Abyss Dragon's speed had slowed down, and they knew that the dragon had reached its limit.

The woman in front of the crowd had a prideful look on her face. She swung the bells on her wrist, and with a glint in her eyes, she looked towards the cultivators around her. She was the one who had discovered the dragon, and she had also suggested the plan to toy with it while chasing after it. By the looks of it, her plan was very effective.

"We'll chase it around for the time it takes to burn an incense stick, since the Abyss Dragon's soul is about to fade away. At that time, we'll use the Secret Art and gather its soul in its body. Then, it'll be much easier to search through its soul."

Excitement appeared in the woman's eyes. She did not bother about the dragon's blood or any Enchanted Vessels. What she cared about was the Abyss Dragon's memories. Ever since she was born, she had been in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and longed to go to the four Great True Worlds. However, all the people around her were the same and had never left the Barren Lands of Divine Essence before. However, the Abyss Dragon should have been banished to this place. If that was the case, then the sights of the world outside should be contained within the memories in its soul.

That was what made her curious.

"Young mistress, we can't fool around anymore. That old monster Xuan Yi's territory lies ahead. The Progenitor has stated before that we are not allowed to enter other people's territory." Just as the woman became excited, one of the two middle-aged men who had been following silently behind her all this while spoke flatly.

These two people were in the initial stage of World Plane Realm, just like the woman. However, the feeling they gave others was as if they had gone through perilous battles, and there were hints of murderous aura surrounding them.

The woman might be unwilling, but after a moment of hesitation, she could only nod in resignation. She shook her wrist, and the bell chimes immediately rang loudly. The speed of the near one hundred cultivators behind her instantly increased exponentially, and they surpassed the Abyss Dragon and surrounded it.

"The hunt has ended. Kill the dragon and preserve its soul properly!" the woman said coldly. In her eyes were excitement and cruelty.

The sounds of affirmation rang out around her, and greed appeared in the eyes of the cultivators. The Abyss Dragon had already turned into an ingredient that they could eat

to increase their levels of cultivation. At that moment, with a single shout, they spread out.

The Abyss Dragon's consciousness had already become clouded. It knew that it was about to die. It might be unwilling to... but there was nothing it could do.

As it laughed brokenly, it closed its eyes, but at the instant they fell shut, a gentle voice immediately echoed in its soul.

"Xiao Huang..."

At the instant the voice reached its soul, a violent shudder wrecked through its body. It trembled incredibly furiously, and even its soul began trembling. Its fading consciousness abruptly stopped scattering away.

It was as if there was an endless amount of thunderbolts roaring in its heart. That name was the most precious existence in its memory. There was only one person who would call it by that name in the world, and that was a young woman called Yu Xuan - the Abyss Dragon's young mistress.

The dragon had not heard these two words for more than a thousand years. Those two words seemed to have awakened its memories, causing tears to fall down the Abyss Dragon's eyes as it trembled.

However, it knew that the person who called it was not its young mistress, but another... voice that it was familiar with.

"Xiao Huang..."

Chapter 858: Anything

When the voice called out the second time, it did not echo in the Abyss Dragon's heart. Instead, it spread throughout the galaxy. That voice seemed weak, but when it reached the place, ripples spread out and the galaxy even looked as if it was distorting.

When that voice landed in the ears of the near one hundred cultivators who were closing in on the Abyss Dragon with the intent of dissecting it, that voice instantly turned into a loud bang that shook the entire galaxy and was deafening to their ears. It crashed straight into their hearts, crushing their minds and breaking their souls.

Blood poured out from all seven orifices in their bodies.

There were nearly one hundred cultivators, and all of them were bleeding from their eyes, nose, ears, and mouth. Their eyes immediately lost focus and all forms of luster

turned into streams of blood that flowed out of their eye sockets. The moths under their bodies also let out shrill screams of pain and exploded into bits and pieces of flesh and blood.

The bodies of the near one hundred cultivators tumbled backwards, as if they had been swept back by a huge force. They coughed up blood in midair... and all of them died!

All of this was caused by the enunciation of the two words!

Those two words killed nearly one hundred cultivators. Even though there were no cultivators in World Plane Realm among them and the strongest was just in Heaven Cultivation Realm, the ability to do this was enough to shock all those who witnessed it.

As the cultivators died altogether, their bodies shattered to pieces as they fell backwards, turning into a picture of mangled flesh. The stench of blood immediately filled the area. The woman with the bells on her wrist instantly turned stark pale, and the two middle-aged men behind her put on solemn expressions that had never appeared on their faces before. There was shock in their eyes, and cold sweat had even broken out on their foreheads due to extreme nervousness.

"Xiao Huang..." The third call traveled clearly from a far away distance at that moment. It landed in the Abyss Dragon, the two men, and the woman's ears.

Once it did, the Abyss Dragon opened its eyes and saw a person walking over from the space in the distance.

That person was dressed in white and had a head full of gray hair. As he walked forward, he gradually closed in, and the dragon saw the young man's handsome face, his ancient presence, his familiar gaze, and the time the Abyss Dragon always thought back upon with nostalgia. His arrival made it seem as if he brought the past with him, and the galaxy around him looked like it had stilled during that moment.

Once the Abyss Dragon saw Su Ming clearly, it trembled even more furiously. Those were tremors caused by agitation and disbelief. It had not expected that it would be able to meet an old friend in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

"You..." The Abyss Dragon only managed to say one word before its eyes slowly fell shut. It was already extremely exhausted, and after going through despair, at the instant it saw Su Ming, its soul began to disperse.

Su Ming walked over to it and lifted his right hand to gently place it on the Abyss Dragon's wound and blood ridden head. With it, the Abyss Dragon's fading soul began converging once again, and all its wounds were instantly healed.

It was with this touch that Su Ming learned of what had happened. Xiao Huang's power had been abrogated, so the dragon could only bring out power equivalent to those in

Man Cultivation Realm. Because of that touch, Su Ming also learned that the Dragon Tendon was missing.

Su Ming did not know how many years the dragon had been in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, but he could imagine that the life of one who could only bring out the power of those in Man Cultivation Realm must have been filled with hardships even if they only were around for several dozens of years.

Not to mention that Su Ming saw numerous injuries on the Abyss Dragon's body as it recovered. In fact, some of them were old, a telling sign that they had been left hundreds of years ago. There were even some injuries on the Abyss Dragon which were... nearly fatal.

Su Ming was infuriated.

He was truly enraged. But besides anger, he also felt worry. He did not know why the Abyss Dragon came to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He only knew that he had saw it take Yu Xuan and leave when they were still in Yin Death Region to head towards the Emperor of Abyss' True World.

Yet now, it had appeared in this place. Then... where was Yu Xuan?

"I am a daylily in the rain... This is the name my mother gave me. She wanted me to forget the sadness in my life and be happy forever..." Yu Xuan's voice seemed to echo in Su Ming's ears, lingering there for a long time.

When Su Ming fell silent, the two middle-aged men not too far away were shivering. The shock on their faces was incredibly great. They could not see through Su Ming's level of cultivation, but they could sense a bloodthirst and murderous aura that they had never sensed before from him.

They had originally thought that they had killed plenty of people, and they were even proud of the invisible murderous aura that had formed around them, but the moment they saw Su Ming, they discovered to their disbelief, the heavy murderous aura on Su Ming's body was something they could not hope to compare to. Theirs was like the light of a firefly compared to a bright moon.

In fact, the mighty pressure Su Ming gave to them almost made these two people's minds break. Even when they were before their Progenitor, they had not faced such great pressure as this. With this in mind, they could immediately be certain that this person was at the very least at the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and there was even a high possibility... that he was an old monster in the later stage of World Plane Realm!

'This Abyss Dragon is the pet of someone in the later stage of World Plane Realm!' As the two people's hearts shook, they saw Su Ming fall silent, and without any hesitation, they grabbed the woman who had become dazed and fell back in frenzy.

Ever since they came under the Progenitor's wing, they had never fled in this manner. They instantly moved with great desperation, but as they moved back, they saw Su Ming lift his head. During that instant, they roared together, and veins popped up on their faces. They pushed the dazed woman thousands of feet away before they shouted at her, "Young mistress, run!!!"

"GO!!!"

The woman trembled. The change had happened too quickly, and she found herself somewhat unable to accept what was going on. At that moment, as the two middle-aged men roared, she turned around and fled with an incredible speed.

Almost at the moment she turned around, a shrill scream of pain came from the area behind her. She was familiar with the owner of that voice. It belonged to one of the two middle-aged men.

Her heart ached. Tears fell down her eyes, but she could no longer repent. As the shadow of death loomed over her head, she experienced fear from the depths of her heart for the first time in her life.

"Your loyalty is commendable, but you won't be able to escape death."

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. He pulled back his right index finger and looked at one of the two middle-aged men in the initial stage of World Plane Realm. His body had shattered. Once he was shredded to pieces, Su Ming cast his gaze on the other person.

That man's face was pale. He was incredibly certain that Su Ming was an old monster in the later stage of World Plane Realm. Even the Progenitor would be a mere ant before this person. The difference between them was like heaven and earth, so he was unable to manifest any will to fight against him.

"I..."

The middle-aged man's face was pale. When he saw that Su Ming had lifted his right hand once again, madness appeared on his face, which was filled with despair. His cultivation base and his soul burst swiftly into flames at the same time, and he charged towards Su Ming as if he had gone mad, choosing to self-destruct.

However, while self-destruction would be an effective move against many since it was an Art that caused death... but before an Abyss Builder, as long as that Abyss Builder

had awakened, it would mostly be useless, especially since Su Ming had already somewhat understood the will of summer in his Life Matrix through his epiphanies.

He lifted his right hand and swung forward. A feeling of time filled the middle-aged man's body. In an instant, time reversed about him, and he went back from the state of self-destruction to the moment before he triggered it, but it did not stop there. Time was still flowing in reverse, and so his face gradually stopped being that of a middle-aged man's, but became that of a young man, then a teenager, and several breaths later, after an unknown of time flowed in reverse on him, his body was reduced to ashes.

Once he finished doing all this, Su Ming turned his head around and cast the sleeping Abyss Dragon a look. It was in deep sleep, and it was clear that it had been a long time since it had rested like this. When he saw that the wounds on its body were healing, a gentle look appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"Sleep. I am here, so you will be safe," Su Ming mumbled. He tapped the dragon lightly with his right hand and put it away into his storage bag before turning his head around to look in the direction in which the woman was leaving, and the chilling glare in his eyes appeared once again.

It did not matter whether the person was a woman or a man, nor whether they were ugly or pretty, all of these things were just their outward appearances and were superficial in Su Ming's eyes. They had nothing to do with him.

He only needed to know that a person wanted to kill Xiao Huang, and that was enough.

"If Yu Xuan was around, she definitely would not have let you suffer so much with the way she was. But she isn't around, so I'll be the one to help you," Su Ming said gently and took a step forward.

He did not rush after that woman, but started walking slowly towards her.

Because of that, a powerful and mighty pressure could be formed. That pressure gathered on the woman, causing her to almost sink into despair in the mid of her fear, making her experience what the Abyss Dragon went through when she had been chasing it down in cold-blood just then.

She shivered. Despair and fear filled her heart and soul. This feeling almost caused her to descend into madness. Tears continued falling down her eyes, and in her fear, she continued escaping nonstop.

Su Ming followed her calmly, occasionally lifting his right index finger to point at her. A bloody gash would immediately appear on the woman's body, and when her blood gushed out, a jade bottle would fly out from Su Ming's storage bag. Once it caught her blood, it would continue floating in the area to be retrieved at any time.

An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. He did not think that he was boasting about his status because of the difference between their levels of cultivation or that he was doing something that was unbecoming of his level of cultivation. In Su Ming's mind, the phrase 'using one's strength to bully the weak' was something that if he needed to do towards enemies, he would find no problems with doing.

He would use a similar method when faced with those of a high level of cultivation as to those with a lower level of cultivation. He would not mind persecuting either of them in such a manner.

Su Ming didn't think that there was anything wrong with his actions. As long as he thought that he should be doing so, then no one could change it. In truth, the person who understood him the most was Yue Hong Bang. Describing him as temperamental was indeed an apt description.

Temperamental and willful. No law or rule could restrain Su Ming's actions, because he didn't believe that his actions were wrong.

'I will chase you down just like how you had chased down Xiao Huang.' This was the simplest way to describe Su Ming's thoughts.

Time passed. The woman's hair was a mess by the time a day had passed with her being chased. Her consciousness had almost faded away, her face was pale, her body was covered in wounds, and blood continued flowing out. It was continuously taken by Su Ming, and the pressure brought by this had left her in extreme despair.

There was still about an entire day before she could reach the Progenitor's cave abode, but her mind could no longer withstand this torment. Eventually, she stopped running away and instead turned around to plead for mercy from Su Ming.

"Senior, please spare me! I know I've done wrong, as long as you don't kill me, I will do anything you ask!" The woman was beautiful. At that moment, her clothes were in tatters and could not hide her body, giving her a tempting charm.

"Anything?" Su Ming asked lightly.

"Anything!" The woman seemed to have thought of something and instinctively bit her lip. A red flush immediately appeared on her cheeks, and the desire to continue living became extremely strong in her heart.

Chapter 859: The Bald Crane's Excitement

Su Ming cast the woman called Yu Luo a look. She was rather good-looking. Her body was curvaceous, and a large portion of her skin was revealed as it was now difficult for

her tattered clothes to cover her up. With the shivers born from fear and the desire to live shining in her eyes, she was filled with an air that would cause the hearts of men to pump with excitement.

Her expression, the color of her face, and the look in her eyes all said that she was willing to pay any sort of price, was willing to do anything. In fact, she was even willing to be ravaged any way Su Ming wanted.

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever as he slowly walked towards the woman. When he approached her, Yu Luo instinctively wanted to dodge, but after a moment of hesitation, she gritted her teeth and stood there, simply allowing Su Ming to get closer to her. By then, their bodies were almost touching.

In fact, she only needed to lean forward slightly and she would fall into Su Ming's embrace. He lowered his head slightly, and by the looks of it, he seemed as if he was going to kiss her lips.

Yu Luo's heart thumped loud in her chest. As the sound rose and fell, her cheeks gradually gained a red flush, and her eyes shone with a woman's charm. It did not matter what sort of request Su Ming would make; she would do her best to curry his favor in order to survive.

Su Ming was about to touch the woman's slightly parted lips, but right at the instant he was about to kiss her, he moved his head to her ear and stopped there.

"I may choose not to kill you, as long as you..." When Su Ming whispered, his words traveled straight into Yu Luo's ear.

As she listened to his voice, she lifted her hands to place them on her clothes. Her face turned even redder, and the gaze in her eyes turned even more alluring.

Yet right at the moment she was about to undress herself, he spoke once again,

"As long as you run like you did just now," he said flatly and lifted his head. He moved hundreds of feet back and put on a smile on his face.

Yu Luo shivered. She stared at Su Ming as her expression changed nonstop. Right when anger born from humiliation rose in her heart, despair reared its head once more. She might have been pampered and cared for since she was young, but she had still seen quite a number of cultivators with different personalities. However, none of them had ever terrified her like the person in front of her right then.

Just as she was about to speak, Su Ming's smile turned into an indifferent one. He lifted his right hand and swung his arm, stirring up a violent gust of wind that swept up Yu Luo and flung her into the distance.

.....

Time had a very mysterious law. To those who were happy, the passing of time seemed as if it was so quick that it was hard to notice it. In the blink of an eye, it would be gone. However, to those who were in torment, time would pass in a terrifyingly slow manner.

This was the case for Yu Luo. As she fled during the last half of a day before she reached her home, she felt as if she had fallen into hell, as if she was submerged in the endless passage of time, and it was moving at an incredibly slow pace.

She was extremely weakened. Her face was pale, and she had lost a large amount of blood, which was all retrieved languidly by the nightmarish existence behind her, who would then continue chasing her at a relaxed pace.

Her consciousness had become clouded and her mind had broken down. The only thing that remained in her mind were Su Ming's words telling her to flee, to continue running.

She did so until a group of meteors floating in the galaxy finally appeared before her. This was her home. At the instant she saw the group of meteors, Yu Luo looked as if she had recovered a hint of her sanity. A strong light appeared in her eyes, and she became slightly faster, instantly heading towards a large stone.

"Progenitor, save me!" At the instant she landed on the meteor, she let out a forlorn cry. When her voice echoed in space, she lost all her strength and collapsed on the ground unconscious.

Su Ming stood in the galaxy and looked at the large group of meteors before him, then watched Yu Luo collapsing on one of them. He heard her forlorn cry echoing in space, but even several breaths later, there was no answer.

The unconscious Yu Luo did not know that her Progenitor did not appear.

Another three breaths passed before Su Ming spoke lightly.

"Not coming out, hmm?" He lifted his right hand and swung it in the air. The overlapping shadows of the Divine Essence Runic Symbols in his eye shone abruptly, then flew out from his eye to surround him before spreading out swiftly.

Loud booms instantly broke the silence. As they reverberated in space, most of the meteors were reduced to ashes in the blink of an eye. The destruction continued, as if it would not stop until all meteors were destroyed.

An anguished sigh came from the collapsing meteors, and an old man in a long blue robe walked out from one of them. That old man had a head full of white hair, and when he walked, he cast a complicated glance at the unconscious Yu Luo, then once he looked at Su Ming, he lowered his head.

"Senior, please calm down. I am Yu Han, a member of the extended family of Yu Family in Black Ink Planet. I have been ordered to keep watch over the members of the family in space. Our daughter of the family, Yu Luo, is young and ignorant, please spare her, and I will definitely offer you great gifts in return." The old man was incredibly respectful as he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply towards Su Ming.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He cast the old man a glance, but did not speak. He did not even ask what gifts the old man would give him in order to solve this matter. He turned around and walked into the distance, without paying any more attention to the old man.

The old man was momentarily stunned by Su Ming's actions, but once a barely noticeable spark shone in his eyes, he immediately took a few steps forward and bowed towards Su Ming again.

"Senior, please wait. I am also at fault in this matter because I have not taught the child properly. I will definitely offer you a satisfactory conclusion to this matter. Senior, since you came to Black Ink Planet, you should be here to attend Black Ink Planet's famous Barren Lands Auction or to head over to Divine Essence Star Ocean to fight against those from the alien race. I have a map detailing part of Divine Essence Star Ocean here with me, which can help you save a lot of time." As the old man spoke, he immediately brought out a piece of beast skin from his bosom, as if he was worried that Su Ming would leave. There were a few lines drawn on it, and it seemed like a map.

Yet strangely, this map was not printed on a jade slip, but was drawn on a beast skin, which was a more primitive manner of drawing a map.

Su Ming's footsteps came to a halt and he turned around to cast the old man a look with the ghost of a smile on his lips.

With it, the old man's heart let out a thump, as if all the secrets he hid in his heart were seen through with that one glance, as if everything about him was laid bare before Su Ming. This feeling immediately turned into a sense of danger that rose swiftly in the old man's heart.

"Senior..." The old man's heart pounded against his chest, but he put on an even more respectful expression. When he spoke instinctively, he suddenly saw Su Ming lifting his right hand to seize the space beside him, and the beast skin in his hand immediately flew out appear in Su Ming's hands.

Su Ming held the beast skin and cast it a few scrutinizing looks before turning around and leaving.

The old man's heart trembled, and his expression changed several times. He did not expect that this person would leave just like that after coming to this place in such an

aggressive manner and killing all the members in his family. He came in such a flashy manner, yet left without a sound.

This made all the preparations he had done to have completely turned to waste.

This made him anxious, and he took a few steps forward to speak again.

"Senior! Senior, please wait! I haven't given you all the gifts yet, there's still... There're still a large amount of crystals I would like to give you to help you succeed in whatever you want to buy during the auction."

These words had no effect on Su Ming, but the moment they were spoken, the bald crane's figure appeared in the space beside him. Its eyes shone and sparkled brilliantly as if there were crystals contained in its eyes as it looked at the old man.

"How many crystals?!" it instantly shouted excitedly.

The old man hesitated for a moment before he gritted his teeth and said, "Three million crystals!"

The bald crane let out a shrill scream, and as its body shivered, it stared intently at the old man. Its expression and gaze were filled with a ferocious air, as if it wanted to swallow the old man whole. Its body also grew larger in space, as if it could not control itself. In the blink of an eye, it had already grown to become several hundreds of feet big.

When the old man heard the bald crane's shrill scream and saw its gigantic body as well as its ferocious expression, his heart shuddered and he took a few steps back to quickly speak up once again.

"Three million crystals are just the start, there will be three million more to come. Senior, please calm down. Please calm down."

It would have been better if he had not said such words. Once they left his mouth, the bald crane screamed even louder, and the shudders in its body seemed to have reached an extreme state. Its expression caused the old man to be nervous, but Su Ming knew... that the bald crane was just too excited.

The shock from the three million crystals was enough to make the bald crane go mad, but when the old man said that there were three million more to come, that number turned into an even greater stimulation that caused the bald crane's mind to become a mess.

"Ten million. I'm willing to give you ten million crystals as an apology." When the old man saw that the gigantic featherless bird-like creature behaving in such a ferocious

and crazed manner, he thought that the number of crystals he was offering was too few, enraging it, which was why he grit his teeth and quickly offered ten million.

At the instant he offered ten million crystals, the bald crane's eyes bulged out and its body shuddered a few times before its eyes rolled backwards and it fainted.

This scene made the old man become even more nervous. Su Ming sighed. He knew that the bald crane had never expected that it would get ten million crystals. This shock came too suddenly, and the crane was stimulated so much that it fainted.

Su Ming shook his head and no longer chose to leave. Instead, he turned around and looked at the old man. A chilling glare shone in his eyes. There was something about this old man. It was something Su Ming had thought when he appeared in this place just now, and after probing around a little, he obtained his answer.

The old man seemed to be thinking of ways to lure Su Ming towards where he was.

"Is the person you're waiting for still not here yet?" he asked flatly.

When he said these words, the old man's heart trembled, but his expression remained as it did, though he did put on a stunned look.

"Senior..."

"I promised the woman that as long as she continued running, I wouldn't kill her, and since you didn't go after the Abyss Dragon, I originally did not consider taking your life, but planned to just punish you lightly.

"But since you schemed against me, then there is no need for me to let things end this way." Su Ming cast the old man a look, and his lips curled up into a cold sneer. He lifted his right hand and pointed towards the old man.

With it, distortions instantly appeared in space, and a destructive power gathered together with a bang to rush towards the old man.

The old man's expression changed. At the instant he retreated, he shouted.

"A strong enemy has invaded our territory! Main family, please take action!"

At the instant he said these words, the meteor on which he stood exploded with a loud bang. The ripples of power that belonged to a Rune rose out. That meteor was a Relocation Rune that not even Su Ming had managed to discover just then.

Chapter 860: Would You like to Become Our Guest?

This was a two-way Relocation Rune. It connected two places, allowing people enter and leave through either of the sides.

If Su Ming had stepped on that meteor just now, then since the Rune was in constant ready more, once it went into operation, he would have been forcefully relocated to a specific region, and the powerful warriors from the Yu Family in that place would have attacked at the same time.

Su Ming might not have discovered that there was a Relocation Rune contained within the meteor, but he had determined that there was something off based on the old man's actions.

The other's attempt to hide was too fake in Su Ming's eyes.

However, there were some strange aspects to this sort of concealment. Su Ming had indeed been unable to discover the man even though he had scanned the area with his Atman, just like how he had been unable to discover the Relocation Rune.

However, once Su Ming destroyed a large portion of the meteors with the runic symbols, the old man seemed to have been forced out. Yet in truth, if he truly wanted to flee, he could have left the area beforehand.

However, he did not leave. Instead, he chose to pretend to hide, then to come out. All of this was just to bait Su Ming into taking action and destroying some of the meteors.

This destruction was like a signal, like he was trying to achieve some sort of goal.

This area was where Yu Family's external faction stayed. The first thing the old man had said was a hasty conveying of his status and an explanation whom this area belonged to. All of this might seem normal, but in truth, he had done so intentionally.

Because of that, Su Ming could mostly determine what that person's goal had been: To ascertain that Su Ming had offended Black Ink Planet and the Yu Family.

If the old man had needed to ascertain this, then it would be much easier to explain what he had previously done. Chasing down the Abyss Dragon had been his personal decision, and even if trouble arose because of this, it had nothing to do with the Yu Family, because it was all merely what he had done personally.

However... if Su Ming destroyed the meteors, then the old man could set up a gigantic sham and make this matter, which was originally just a personal matter of his, into a fight against Su Ming and his entire family.

After all, each and every single Relocation Rune set in the external factions were of great importance for a powerful family that could set a stronghold in Black Ink Planet and have their name ring through the entire Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Those

Relocation Runes were part of their status. Once they were destroyed, it would be as if they had been slapped in the face, and they would definitely be unable to let this slide.

However, it was a pity for the old man, because Su Ming had managed to see that there was something off with his actions, and he did not step on the meteors, but had instead turned around to leave. This immediately caught the old man off guard. The members of the family would definitely look into the matter of the meteors being destroyed, and if Su Ming left, then with how strict the family was to its members, they would definitely be able to find clues leading to the truth, and at that time, he would have to face severe punishment.

After all, in his eyes, Su Ming was at the very least a cultivator at the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm. In fact, there was a high possibility that he was a powerful cultivator in the later stage of World Plane Realm.

Unless absolutely necessary, even the main family would not offend this sort of person.

That was why he had used the map as bait, wishing to lure Su Ming over. When he failed, he had spared no pains in using crystals as bait. However, when Su Ming had looked towards him with that gaze of his that seemed to be able to see through him, the old man knew that a deviation had occurred in his plan.

That was why he had changed his plan without any hesitation. Since the other refused to come over so the old man could not send Su Ming to the main family, then he absolutely could not let him leave. If he could summon the main family here when Su Ming was still around, then... once they started fighting, this would no longer have too much connection to him.

Even after they found the reason for this in the future, the enmity would have already been born between the main family and this person, so they would no longer have a choice.

Loud booms came from the Rune. A piercing white light instantly spread out and swept through the area from the meteor. In the blink of an eye, it covered the entire area, and as the Rune was activated, three figures immediately walked out.

They were two men and one woman. One of them was a middle-aged man, and he had a somber expression. The other two behind him were young adults, but all three of them were sending out ripples of power that belonged to those in the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

The middle-aged man had already reached the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm. With this level of cultivation, he could already fight against Zhao Family's Progenitor. Even if he was still slightly weaker than the other, this man could already become an overlord of a region.

At the instant he saw the three people, Su Ming formed an impression towards Black Ink Planet. Just one Yu Family in there had let Su Ming see four cultivators in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, three cultivators in the initial one, and numerous in Heaven Cultivation Realm.

This was also clearly just the tip of the iceberg of the Yu Family!

Even though Su Ming did not know what sort of status Yu Family had in Black Ink Planet, he could tell from this hint of their power alone that Black Ink Planet... was an ancient planet that had existed even before the fifth True World was destroyed. It was the only planet that had broken the seal many years before Su Ming had arrived and the living beings within it had been able to venture out and escape from being suppressed by the four Great True Worlds.

It allowed this planet to become a cultivation planet that was not controlled by the four Great True Worlds! It was a free, lawless planet that became a gathering place for many old monsters in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

The powerful were the rulers of Black Ink Planet. The four Great True Worlds did not pay attention to them, and no True Guards would dare come to the planet rashly, causing this place to seem rather chaotic. However, in truth, this planet became the place that gathered the most attention in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Most of the powerful warriors in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence gathered in this place. Cultivators in the later stage of World Plane Realm or those who had attained completion as well as those in Lunar Kalpa Realm along with those in Solar Kalpa Realm might be here as well.

If anyone compared Sinful Barren Lands to a jail, then the existence of Black Ink Planet would become the darkest place of this jail, but would also be the only source of dawning light at the same time.

Its geographical location prevented the four Great True Worlds from conquering it from afar, because on the other side of Black Ink Planet... was Divine Essence Star Ocean, the place that made the four Great True Worlds wary. It was the true place that they were fending against!

Because the alien races were in Divine Essence Star Ocean, some of the members of these alien races were remnants of the fifth True World in the past. However, most of them were mysterious alien races that possessed Divine Essence and were filled with an intimidating presence even while the fifth True World was still around.

No one knew where the alien races with Divine Essence came from, and very few people knew just how many of them there were in Divine Essence Star Ocean. They seemed to have formed their own cultivation system and rarely formed any form of contact with the world outside. However, based on his conversations with the Duke of

Crimson Flame, Su Ming had been able to tell that besides the legendary existences that were the Kalpa Lord and the True Progenitor of the fifth True World, the powerful cultivators that were believed to not belong to the fifth True World... were from outer space. This 'outer space' could mean that they had come from other worlds, and could also mean... that they came from Divine Essence Star Ocean.

As the only transition point between Divine Essence Star Ocean and the four Great Galaxies of Sinful Barren Lands, it was impossible for Black Ink Planet to not become the most eye-catching place in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Su Ming had learned from some of other people's memories that Black Ink Planet connected Divine Essence Star Ocean with the four Great Galaxies. That was why it became a transition point for those who wanted to take the risk to enter Divine Essence Star Ocean. Over the course of numerous years, a large amount of items, treasures, and almost every sort of item imaginable had appeared in Black Ink Planet.

In fact, there were even members of alien races appearing in Black Ink Planet. These people could come and go as they pleased, which made this planet to become the only spot where members of both galaxies could trade.

Hence, a tradition was formed in Black Ink Planet countless years ago that shocked the entire Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and was even able to make True Guards hide their identity to come to this place.

That tradition was the auction.

Auction halls of various sizes became incredibly grand places in Black Ink Planet, and each one was managed by a family. The size of the auction hall was always the deciding factor for the family's status and power in Black Ink Planet. It would decide their rise and fall.

Since auctions were celebrated for being honest and strict, that was why the families that manage these auctions would gradually start forming their own family rules as they continued growing. These rules were mostly used to provide service for auctions, and they would offer different forms of protection as well as punishment towards a family member's overbearing attitude.

Su Ming had come to know these things when he obtained the memories of the people he devoured using the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole. He looked at the three people walking out of the Rune with his usual calm expression.

"I am Yu Chen Hai. Greetings, fellow Daoist. How may I address you?" The middle-aged man who walked out of the Rune cast Su Ming a glance with a somber expression on his face. He might not be able to tell Su Ming's level of cultivation, but he could sense the murderous aura and the mighty pressure coming from him. Yet even so, his expression did not change as he wrapped his fist in his palm and spoke.

"Su Ming," Su Ming answered languidly. He did not use Mo Su's name because that name had quite the reputation in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He did not know anything about Black Ink Planet, so it would be best for him to not make a fuss.

"I see, so you are fellow Daoist Su. May I know whether the Yu Family has offended you?" the middle-aged man asked in a somber tone.

The old man who was tasked to keep watch over the region was feeling incredibly nervous at that moment. He knew how strict the rules were in the family but had thought that the family would take action immediately after they arrived once they saw that most of the meteors had been destroyed. As long as they attacked, everything would be simple.

However, the members of the family who appeared did not immediately take action but instead started communicating with the person.

'I can't let them continue talking with each other!' The old man grit his teeth, then cast a swift glance at the unconscious Yu Luo by the side then began roaring. He went to Yu Luo's side, and when he lifted his head, his eyes were bloodshot. Rage burned in his eyes as he stared at Su Ming.

"You killed nearly one hundred of my family's disciples, made Yu Luo's fate unknown, destroyed most of the meteors here, and even wanted to kill me. I will definitely not let this slide. If you want to fight, then fight!" As the old man spoke, he rose up from the ground and charged towards Su Ming.

When the old man moved, a light crease appeared between the middle-aged man's brows. He could not figure out Su Ming's level of cultivation, but once he came to this place, he had scanned the area with his divine sense. When he saw the meteors and the old man's reaction, he formed his own judgment of the situation.

He was originally hesitant, but once he saw that a member of his family had attacked, he decided to attack to judge Su Ming's strength. However, just as he was about to move, a bright light suddenly appeared, and his foot, which had already taken a step forward, froze.

He saw Su Ming waving his arm as he stood in space, and immediately, a large amount of shining runic symbols appeared out of nowhere. As they spun in space, they surrounded the old man who was charging towards Su Ming. Once they formed multiple rings around him, they contracted, and as if they were sealing him, they encircled him and prevented him from moving. No matter how hard the old man struggled, he could not move even a single inch.

'A seal that can make a cultivator in the middle stage of World Plane Realm be unable to move!' The middle-aged man's eyes shone brilliantly, and once he cast an attentive

glance at the runic symbols on the old man's body, he let out a hearty laugh and wrapped his fist in his palm before bowing to Su Ming.

"Fellow Daoist Su, with your power, it is clear that the members of the extended family have provoked you first. Please forgive us in regards to this matter. I will definitely report this to the family and punish this man as a response for you."

This time, the somber expression was gone from his face. His laughter was hearty, and there was a friendly attitude that was just pitched to the right level.

Yu Chen Hai's expression was sincere as he said with a smile, "Fellow Daoist Su, do you happen to have a place to stay in Black Ink Planet? If you don't mind, would you like to be a guest of the Yu Family and receive our offerings?"

Chapter 861: Uphold Justice

Yu Chen Hai's laughter was bright. The sincere expression on his face made it seem as if he already knew everything about what had happened here, just like he had said - he knew that his family member was the one at fault.

However, Su Ming did not believe it. No matter how strict the rules in a family were, they would still be protective of their own blood. Besides, his attitude had changed completely from a person who had a somber expression on his face and had seemed to want to attack at any time to test him without asking him anything and without trying to understand the situation just because Su Ming had executed a divine ability.

If there was something strange, then there definitely was something wrong going on.

"A guest?" Su Ming asked lightly.

"Yu Family is one of the many families in Black Ink Planet. We have our own auction hall, and it's one of the top three middle-sized auction halls in the planet. Fellow Daoist Su, if you're willing to become our guest, then you will receive thirty thousand crystals per month as an offering. You will also receive the White Jade Plate, which will allow you to obtain discounts in our auction hall and receive honorable treatment.

"We will also provide you a cave abode within our territory. There will be sufficient spiritual aura in it. You can request from us whatever you need. As long as it isn't a clone, we will agree to all your requests.

"The Yu Family will also not tie you down in any manner. You may leave at any time you please. You will have freedom in all your actions, and we won't need you to do anything on usual days. You just need to lend a hand during crucial moments. Every single time you help us, we will also offer you additional rewards.

"Fellow Daoist, what do you think?" Yu Chen Hai asked with a smile.

Su Ming was the only person in his eyes, and he did not even look at the old man from his family who was sealed. In fact, in Yu Chen Hai's mind, Su Ming who had a seal that could seal a cultivator in the middle stage of World Plane Realm was far more important than most other people. Even though Yu Chen Hai did not have the right to invite someone to become their family's guest and the recruitment of guests was incredibly strict in all families, it did not matter to him. He knew that only family elders had the right to invite guests and those guests' backgrounds had to be thoroughly investigated, but when he thought of Su Ming's Sealing Art, his heart burned with eagerness.

As long as Su Ming agreed to it, he could investigate his background on a later date and could use his own resources in exchange for the status of a temporary guest.

"Fellow Daoist Yu, aren't you afraid that I am a person with ulterior motives? Aren't you treating this as too much of a child's play by hastily inviting me to be your guest?" Su Ming's expression remained the same as he smiled faintly at Yu Chen Hai.

A glint appeared in Yu Chen Hai's eyes, and the smile on his face grew wider. As he shook his head, he wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming.

"It is only expected that you would be doubtful, Brother Su. I have indeed been rash in my actions..." Once he said these words, Yu Chen Hai hesitated for a moment. When he looked at Su Ming once again, he spoke in a decisive manner.

"Brother Su, I won't hide from you. I don't have the right to invite you as a guest, but I can invite you to be our temporary guest. Even if you do have an ulterior risk, I am willing to take this risk. I will take this gamble and believe in you." Yu Chen Hai's expression was incredibly sincere as he bowed deeply towards Su Ming.

"Oh? Let's hear it in detail," Su Ming said flatly.

"I might be a direct descendant of the family, but my status isn't high. Thanks to the kindness of the older generation, I have finally been given the right to host an auction. However, there are too few people by my side who can help me, and I also lack a person who is skilled in laying down seals.

"That is why I've thought of convincing you to be a guest once I saw your Sealing Art. Please forgive me for not being honest just now," Yu Chen Hai said sincerely. He could tell that Su Ming was not trying to get closer to him by saying these words, because Yu Chen Hai had only just learned that he was going to host an auction, and it was impossible for his competitors in the family to arrange a stranger who had extraordinary power to get closer to him in such a manner.

More importantly, it was by pure accident that he was relocated to this place and met Su Ming. The person who was originally supposed to come here was not him, but his

father. He was merely coming to this area in his place, and his father, who was a family elder, would naturally not have let his son be harmed.

Besides, he could tell from some clues that Su Ming did not know just how important Sealing Arts were in Black Ink Planet. However, there was also something off about this. After all, the first attack Su Ming had delivered was to cast a seal.

"You need a person who is skilled with seals?" Su Ming looked at Yu Chen Hai.

"Brother Su, this must be your first time in Black Ink Planet. There are quite a number of people who know a few Sealing Arts in Black Ink Planet, but only a few of them can seal cultivators in the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

"With this Sealing Art of yours, you would be valued highly no matter which auction hall you went to. In fact, if someone acted as your recommendation, you could even be a valued existence in the three large auction halls.

"Forget the fact that those family members of mine would not be able to invite a powerful warrior like you to be our guest, even within the Yu Family, only three people are capable of doing such a feat as yours.

"If that is the case, then what should I be afraid of? Brother Su, please help me, I will definitely reward you greatly." Yu Chen Hai looked at Su Ming sincerely as he waited for his reply.

Su Ming pondered over his words for a moment before he stated slowly, "You still haven't told me why you need those Sealing Arts."

"To seal the treasures that will be auctioned. This time, I will be hosting the auction, but I don't have the resources to ask for the assistance of the three guests who are skilled in Sealing Arts in my family. I only have with me a few guests who are under the command of the older generation with whom I share my blood, but they might not be up to my satisfaction.

"This time, I will be putting a number of treasures from the alien races up on auction, and I will need a powerful warrior skilled in Sealing Arts to seal them so that they will not undergo a transformation," Yu Chen Hai quickly explained. In truth, he had only told Su Ming about a fifth of the truth. It was only natural that he did not tell him everything: That this time, Yu Family's auction would be the first official competition among the people of his generation.

There were six auctions in total, and there would be six different people who would host them. All of the older generations were not allowed to provide them with too much help, and it would entirely depend on their own abilities on how well they could organize the auctions.

This would determine the six people's positions in the family in the future. The fights both in the open and in secret have already started a long time ago.

In fact, even the auctioned items during the auction would be determined by their abilities. If they managed to bring to their side a cultivator that could seal those within the initial stage of World Plane Realm, then they could apply to auction off treasures that would require people to seal these treasures.

If they managed to bring to their side a cultivator who could seal those in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, then they could apply to auction off even higher quality treasures. Yu Chen Hai was certain that if he could auction off treasures of this caliber, then his chances of standing out among the other five would be incredibly high.

"As long as you agree to it, then I am willing to give you five million crystals as thanks in advance. Once I complete hosting the auction, I will give you ten million crystals extra to thank you.

"Brother Su, don't worry. The very first rule in Yu Family is that we must fulfill our promises!" Yu Chen Hai wrapped his fist in his palm once again.

Right when Yu Chen Hai finished saying these words, the unconscious bald crane by Su Ming's side opened its eyelids to reveal a pair of eyes that were shining with a brilliant light that was akin to the light of crystals. It was so excited that its body began trembling once again, eager to immediately agree to this matter.

However, just as it was about to speak to agree to the matter in Su Ming's place, it saw Su Ming glaring at it, and it immediately swallowed its words, but its heart was already bleeding in pain at the loss.

"Crystals, oh my crystals..." When the bald crane put on a dejected expression and looked as if it had suffered injustice, a focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He did not expect that this family in Black Ink Planet would have such financial power that ten million crystals would seem like a small number. This was a great difference compared to the other planets in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Based on his experience, he could tell that Yu Chen Hai had not told him the full story. However, the general picture he had given Su Ming should not be fake. At that moment, as he opened and closed his eyes, a smile appeared on Su Ming's lips.

"All those from the Yu Family will definitely fulfill their promises as long as they gave their word, you say?"

"That's right. This is the rule in Yu Family. You do not need to worry," Yu Chen Hai said with a smile.

"Is it the same for everyone?" Su Ming looked to the side.

Yu Chen Hai hesitated for a moment, but still could not truly grasp what Su Ming meant. "It's the same for everyone."

Su Ming let out a fake cough, then lifted his right hand to pointed towards the old man he had sealed by the side before he spoke in a relaxed manner.

"This person had promised to give me one billion crystals just now as an apology. Brother Yu, since you're here and you heard him make this promise, you should be a witness for me."

As Yu Chen Hai was momentarily stunned by his words, the old man who was sealed but still had his ability to hear widened his eyes and began struggling violently. Anger appeared in his eyes, and it was so great that it looked as if it could burn everything around, making him look as if he would definitely cry out in rage with all his strength if he could break free.

There was also despair and resentment amid that anger. It was a despair that came from his soul as well as a resentment that came from his heart, and they almost drove him mad.

The bald crane's eyes went wide, and its breathing quickened. Its body trembled in agitation as it looked at Su Ming again. Suddenly, it felt heartfelt admiration towards Su Ming, and felt that he had become incomparably great.

'Well, damn me. I thought that I was devious enough, but I didn't expect this, I honestly didn't expect this. This Su Ming usually doesn't reveal his real character, so I didn't expect him to be so sly. He just promised ten million crystals, but this Su Ming... said it was one billion!

'That middle-aged man named Yu Chen Hai wants to bring Su Ming to his side and will definitely act as a witness. This is... He's too unbelievable!

'Devious, truly devious. Little Devious Su, he's even more devious than I am... Looks like I'll have to learn from him. Yes, I'll definitely master this, and I'll surpass his abilities!

"One... One billion?" Yu Chen Hai was momentarily stunned before he instinctively asked again to make sure. The eyes of the two people behind him also went wide, filled with a strange expression. They naturally saw that there was something off about this. They had never seen such brazen extortion in their lives.

"Hmm? Brother Yu, didn't you hear with your own ears just now that this person promised me one billion crystals? Could it be that he was lying to me?" Su Ming frowned and let out a cold harrumph. "I was thinking of becoming your guest, but if this person had so shamelessly lied to me, then I'll have to rethink this."

Yu Chen Hai could only laugh wryly. He cast a pitying glance at the old man, who was almost going mad in his despair but could only struggle and not speak, then immediately nodded towards Su Ming.

"That's right, I... heard... just now, but this person should not have that many crystals with him. Don't worry though, Brother Su, all his savings will belong to you, and if it's not enough, he will pay with his life!" Once he said these words, a resolute and ruthless look appeared in Yu Chen Hai's eyes.

'He's just a cultivator who forcefully rose to the middle stage of World Plane Realm with the use of a treasure from the alien race, and he won't be able to improve even the slightest bit for the rest of his life. He's also a member of the extended family. Even if he's under father's command... it'll be fine to sacrifice him.' Yu Chen Hai had already made his decision in his heart. When he looked towards Su Ming once again, his impression of him had changed by far too much.

"Thank you for upholding justice, Brother Yu. Then, when will we head to Black Ink Planet?" Su Ming smiled faintly.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 862: The Shamans Reappear - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 862: The Shamans Reappear

Chapter 862: The Shamans Reappear

'O endless galaxy, I want to praise the great Little Devious Su. His deviousness is a light that the galaxy cannot conceal. His deviousness is a dream that all manner of lives in the world cannot hope to obtain.

'O boundless universe, I want to praise the Little Devious Su who is even greater than me. His deviousness can conceal the universe and cause the galaxy to turn black. His deviousness can cover all manner of living, causing all the people's hair to turn black .

'His deviousness also symbolizes my determination. Little Devious Su... continue showing off your devious nature and infect all manner of lives with your deviousness. I will be by your side and walk down this black path...'

The bald crane looked at Su Ming's back with a pious expression as it followed behind him. During that moment, it looked up to Su Ming with unparalleled admiration. In fact, in its eyes, Su Ming was a light that would point it towards the peak of the path to get even more crystals.

The bald crane was almost in tears. Those tears were due to it being touched, to have found someone walking down the same path, and the excitement of having its ideals resonate with someone else now that it had found someone who was even more devious than itself.

The bald crane's excited thoughts and musings echoed in Su Ming's mind. No one else could hear them, but Su Ming still felt odd. He let out a fake cough, and under Yu Chen Hai's invitation, stepped into the Relocation Rune with him.

Yu Luo and the old man were naturally taken away by the other two people. As the Relocation Rune shone with a brilliant light, booming sounds echoed in space, and the people disappeared.

Su Ming might seemed to have left with them in a relaxed manner, but he had not relaxed his guard even a single bit. At the instant the Rune was activated, he had made preparations to attack immediately if anything went wrong.

After all, to other people, the manifestation of Su Ming's level of cultivation was rather indistinct. He seemed like he was in the initial stage, but also like he was in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and they were unable to tell which was the truth. Unless someone had witnessed Su Ming engaged with another person in a battle of Arts with their own eyes or saw him bring out all his power in the form of pressure, they could only guess his level of cultivation based on what they could sense.

Even the old man who had been sealed and extorted could not tell what Su Ming's actual level of cultivation was. He could only guess that Su Ming might be in the later stage of World Plane Realm, but he could not be certain about it.

It was much less so for Yu Chen Hai, which was why it had become Su Ming's hidden tactic. Once he fused with Divine Essence, he could execute the terrifying power of those in the later stage of World Plane Realm.

This was also one of the powers he possessed that made him dare come to Black Ink Planet.

The light from the Relocation Rune blocked his field of vision, and as the light gradually faded away, Su Ming sensed the power from the Relocation Rune reverberating in space. The booming sounds in his ears gradually became weaker, and at that moment, Su Ming immediately spread his Atman.

The world around him instantly appeared in his mind.

They were in a towering hall that had nine pillars of crouching dragons around them. On each pillar was a person sitting cross-legged. There was no aura spreading out from these nine people, which made it seem as if they were dead.

Su Ming did not sense any danger, but he did not pull back his Atman. When the light from the Relocation Rune completely disappeared from his eyes and their figures showed up in the hall, Su Ming lowered his head to look at the ground beneath his feet.

There was a complicated Relocation Rune on the entire floor, and he could vaguely see the word Jade written indistinctly at one point. Su Ming could not see anything else wrong in the other areas of the Rune, but he did not know much about Runes. If Hu Zi was in this place, he would definitely be able to tell with just one look where the core of the Rune lay.

"Welcome to the Yu Family." Yu Chen Hai remained friendly. When he spoke with a smile at Su Ming, he extended his right hand to show him the way forward.

"Brother Su, I will take you to where you can rest first. I still have some things to discuss with you later. This way, please!" As he spoke, Yu Chen Hai became the first to walk out of the Rune. Su Ming nodded in agreement. As he walked out, he swept his gaze across the nine people who were sitting cross-legged around the Rune.

"These people are the guards of the Rune. They practice a unique cultivation method and do not have any signs of life about them. The only thing remaining in them is the aura of death, but each of them can bring out the power equivalent to those in the middle stage of World Plane Realm." Yu Chen Hai smiled faintly and offered an explanation. It was not without the intention to show off.

"This place is where your family is located, so it's only natural that you do so." Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever. Yu Chen Hai did not notice that a barely noticeable glint had appeared in Su Ming's eyes when he looked towards the nine people just now.

Perhaps other people could not find any clues about them, but Su Ming... had sensed a hint of the Shamans' presence from these nine people!

These nine people did not practice any unique cultivation methods. They were Shaman Puppets that only Soul Catchers could create!

'Just what level of cultivation had these Shamans reached to be able to create Shaman Puppets at the middle stage of World Plane Realm...' When Su Ming averted his gaze, he suddenly found that he no longer felt that Black Ink Planet was an unfamiliar place. Instead, he found a sense of familiarity to it.

This did not mean that he had come to this place before, but because he had sensed the Shamans' presence.

'I didn't expect that there would be Shamans in this place. Why would they be here? This race was born after branching out and evolving from the Berserkers... That's right, the Berserkers were once one of the alien races in the fifth True World.'

'There are plenty of other alien races within the vast Divine Essence Star Ocean beyond Black Ink Planet... Perhaps there are also Shamans there!

'By the looks of it, the first God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu, should have been the first person to venture out and search for the entrance to the fifth True World. Then... could he also be in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence? If he is, then... is he alive or dead? Is he on Black Ink Planet, or could he be in Divine Essence Star Ocean?' Su Ming had made many connections between various thoughts from the Shaman Puppets.

All these things caused him to develop great interest towards Black Ink Planet. It also seemed to have formed a connection with the land of Berserkers in his memories.

He stopped pondering over the matter. At the moment he walked out of the hall, he saw blue sky and white clouds. This was the first time he had seen such a blue piece of sky in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

Most of the sky in the other cultivation planets was dark and dim. Even those planets that did not have a dark sky would have muddled and clouded colors above. Only the sky in this place was as blue as a piece of silk, so people could not help it but look up.

A gentle breeze lifted Su Ming's hair. The wind was refreshing, and there was even a spiritual aura contained within it. With one breath, it felt as if all pores in his body had been opened up. It had been a long time since Su Ming had felt this sort of wind against his skin.

This was a completely different place compared to all the other planets in the four Great True Worlds. This was... like paradise.

There was a smile on Yu Chen Hai's face at that moment. He might seem calm, but in truth, when Su Ming walked out of the Rune, he had been observing him. He might not have been able to see the glint in Su Ming's eyes when the other looked towards the nine puppets, but he had seen him looking at the sky and taking that one breath instinctively.

These were just minor details, but Yu Chen Hai had always believed that minor details could determine everything. From these details, he was certain by seven-tenths that this was the first time Su Ming came to Black Ink Planet.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath and said slowly, "This place is completely different from all the other planets I've gone to."

More accurately speaking, Su Ming had never been to a normal planet. He had previously been in Yin Death Region and was later sent to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. All the planets he went to were barren wastelands. It could be said that Black Ink Planet... was the first planet Su Ming had ever stepped into.

"Brother Su, since you've decided to stay in Black Ink Planet, then you will be a cultivator in Black Ink Planet from now on. You can have everything here permanently." Yu Chen Hai smiled and became even more certain in his heart that this was the first time Su Ming had come to this place.

"Brother Su, let us head to your lodgings first. I still have some things I would like to discuss with you."

Su Ming nodded and averted his gaze from the sky to follow Yu Chen Hai into the distance. Wherever he went, there would be tall towers all around. As Su Ming sent his Atman outwards, he found that there were quite a number of places that repelled his presence. His true level of cultivation was not as high as his physical body's, that was why his Atman was much weaker than of those that belonged to the later stage of World Plane Realm. Once he scanned the area, he pulled back his Atman and no longer looked around.

This simple scan had allowed Su Ming to see that this was a gigantic manor, and it was built on a flat piece of land. There were faint figures of lush, green mountains in the distance.

Soon, Yu Chen Hai stopped next to a small courtyard, outside a double-story tower.

"Brother Su, please treat this place as your temporary lodgings for now. I will go report to the older generation of the family that you are my temporary guest. If everything goes smoothly, then I will be able to help you obtain the plate immediately, but if things don't go smooth... then you will need to be tested. I will have to trouble you for this. I hope you will not mind." Yu Chen Hai wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed towards Su Ming. His expression remained sincere.

"This won't take long. A decision will be made by sunset. During the process, try not to venture out. I hope you won't mind this offence."

"As for the one... one billion crystals, I will ask someone to handle this. Soon, someone should be here to give you the crystals." Yu Chen Hai was worried that Su Ming would be displeased and provided detailed explanations.

"I will remain in the room." Su Ming cast Yu Chen Hai a glance. He did not harbor any dislike towards this person, and since he had been polite all this while, Su Ming nodded.

When he saw Su Ming agreeing to stay in his room, Yu Chen Hai smiled and bowed to him before turning around to leave.

Su Ming stepped into the courtyard but did not enter the tower. Instead, he sat down cross-legged on the grass. It was quiet all around him. Occasionally, a gentle breeze would blow past him. He looked at the sky as if he was meditating, but also seemed to be deep in thought. Gradually, he forgot about the flow of time.

The Duke of Crimson Flame manifested beside him and bent his body slightly, keeping a vigilant eye on the surroundings.

The bald crane was lying by Su Ming's feet. Its eyes were moving about, though no one knew what it was thinking about. However, from the occasional drop of saliva that would fall from its beak, all those who saw it would definitely be able to tell that it was definitely thinking about something related to crystals.

Xiao Huang was still sleeping in Su Ming's storage bag, but all of its injuries had already healed, and it should wake up soon.

Two hours later, the Duke of Crimson Flame's eyes sparkled, and its body gradually turned indistinct. However, its gaze was fixed on the door to the courtyard. After a moment, the sound of knocking on the door could be heard. Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung it, opening the door to the courtyard. A young man walked in. He was one of the two people who had followed Yu Chen Hai previously. There was an incredibly respectful look on his face. Once he placed a wooden box and a storage bag before Su Ming respectfully, he bowed and left.

The eyes of the bald crane immediately went wide, and it charged towards the storage bag in excitement, but before it even got close to it, the storage bag flew up on its own and landed on Su Ming's palm.

When the bald crane saw that the storage bag was taken by Su Ming, it changed directions and pounced on the wooden box to quickly open it. At the instant it did so, a bloody stench spread out, for there was a human head contained within it.

It was the head that belonged to the old man who had promised Su Ming the crystals.

Su Ming cast a glance at the head, then scanned the storage bag with his Atman.

"Seventeen million crystals. Is this all his money?" Su Ming put away the storage bag and ignored the bald crane who was giving him a bitter look. He closed his eyes and meditated.

'Damn it, so many crystals... What should I do? What should I do...?' When the bald crane saw that Su Ming was not paying any attention to it, it immediately clenched its teeth in anger.

Darkness gradually covered the sky. The bright, blue sky that stretched to the ends of the horizon just one moment ago was soon hidden by dark clouds. When the sun was about to set, there were numerous dark clouds above.

When the muffled sound of thunder rang through the air, it looked as if rain was about to pour.

Su Ming opened his eyes. When he looked at the sky, the door to the courtyard was pushed open, and Yu Chen Hai walked in with an incredibly sullen expression.

"Brother Su, these are the crystals I promised you. They've gone overboard! I'm not hosting the auction anymore!" Yu Chen Hai brought out a storage bag. He was feeling incredibly resentful at the moment, and if he had not been suppressing his emotions continuously just now, he would have burst out a long time ago.

"Calm down." When Su Ming said these words calmly, he averted his gaze from the sky, and his eyes met Yu Chen Hai's.

1. In the original version, Su Ming is actually supposed to be Little Black Su, which means that he has a black heart, but it doesn't mean that he is evil or emotionally cold, per say, just means that he is devious, which is why you have that turn everyone's hair black thing. It basically means that he is so devious that he's turning everything black.

2. Jade in the Rune: Jade is written as 玉, and it is the meaning of the Yu family name.

Chapter 863: Swallow's Feathers

Yu Chen Hai had been in a gloomy mood originally, but after he cast Su Ming a look, it was as if everything before his eyes had disappeared, and the only thing that remained was the other's eyes.

The sun, moon, and stars were contained within his eyes. The three celestial bodies grew larger in Yu Chen Hai's eyes before completely replacing his world, making him feel as if he was in a galaxy. There, he was as insignificant as an ant. When he was compared to the galaxy, all of his frustrations became insignificant; they were not worth feeling frustrated over.

At that moment, he could see snow floating down within the galaxy formed by the sun, moon, and stars. It made him feel that everything was so hazy that it felt unreal. However, when that snow landed on his body, the chill spreading out from it made him feel as if he was in an ice cave that would last for eternity. He felt a frigid cold fill his entire body and heart. That cold did not chill him to the bone, but froze his body and even soul for a moment.

That pause calmed his heart, and Yu Chen Hai sucked in a deep breath. He instinctively took a few steps back, and when he looked at Su Ming again, the other had already shut his eyes.

Yu Chen Hai was then unable to tell whether he had recovered from being frozen because Su Ming had closed his eyes or because he had freed himself from it. Even though that feeling just now had disappeared without a trace, Yu Chen Hai believed he

absolutely had not mistaken what he sensed. There was definitely something abnormal about Su Ming, or else he would not have been able to make him lose his composure with just one glance.

In fact, he had felt that his soul and his body had been separated from each other during that instant just then. If Su Ming had wanted to bring him harm, then Yu Chen Hai would have definitely been unable to fight back. He would have been at Su Ming's mercy.

Cold sweat broke out on his forehead. When Yu Chen Hai looked at Su Ming again, wariness rose in his heart. As he wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming, he lowered his head and said softly, "I lost my composure, thank you for waking me up, Brother Su."

Yu Chen Hai might have been courteous with Su Ming earlier, but that courteous attitude had been one that was used between equals. However, when he spoke at that moment, even he did not notice that he had clearly placed himself at a lower position.

Sometimes, there was no need for people to attack to show their strength. One glance and a few simple words would be enough to garner respect from others.

"Sit," Su Ming said in that flat tone.

Yu Chen Hai sucked in a deep breath and sat down cross-legged before Su Ming. In his eyes, Su Ming was now completely different. That calmness within him was one that would not be shaken even if the sky collapsed and the ground shattered. Yu Chen Hai could sense it incredibly well.

"I have made a fool of myself. I made a promise to you earlier, but it made me come under the suspicion of the other branches of the family. They want to hold the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao test on you, which only a few of even the true guests of the family would be able to pass.

"And they will definitely not allow you to pass the test. If it wasn't because the lineage with the family ancestor's blood mostly doesn't care about the matters in the world and have ventured in Divine Essence Star Ocean, these people wouldn't dare to oppress you in such a straightforward manner. They were so unfair, and that was what caused my anger," Yu Chen Hai explained with a bitter laugh.

Dark clouds filled the sky at that moment. As the muffled sounds of thunder roared in the air, huge drops of rain poured down, causing dust fog to rise from the ground. However, before this dust fog could rise into the air, it was immediately struck back down once more, until no dust dared to rise up.

Su Ming did not speak. He looked at the dust, watched the rain mercilessly pouring down from the sky, and witnessed the downfall of the dust fog. After some time, he cast his gaze at Yu Chen Hai.

"What is fair, and what is unfair?" Su Ming asked calmly.

"That is..." Yu Chen Hai was momentarily stunned.

"The height of mountains is not the same, hence it is unfair for them. The ground is not completely flat, hence it is also unfair. All manner of lives are not equal, so it is unfair for them as well. The length of the rivers is not the same, hence it is unfair for them too. Planets rise and fall, and even for galaxies, there is no such thing as equality. So then, how would you think of obtaining fairness?

"Fairness has never existed in the world. This so called fairness is just a form of mercy from the strong to the weak. It's a form of self pity of the weak as they bemoan their own fate," Su Ming said lightly. When those words landed in Yu Chen Hai's ears, his heart started trembling. This sort of theory and words overturned his way of thinking. They formed an impact that caused his breathing to become slightly quicker.

"Look at the dust fog. The fog is like a person's life, and the might of heavens is like its life. The unknown is the rain, and when it falls onto the ground, the dust will first rise into the air, then will fall back.

"Is this fair?" he asked flatly.

Yu Chen Hai was momentarily stunned. When he turned his head back to look at the falling rain, he was silent for a moment, then looked like he had come to an understanding.

The rain poured down from the sky without end, but there were several black spots in the horizon in the distance. Those were swallows that had not been able to find shelter from the rain in time. They struggled in the rain, and because their wings were drenched, it became incredibly difficult for them to fly, and they seemed as if they were about to plunge down at any moment.

There was one swallow that flew to the area near the courtyard with great effort. Just as it was about to fall, Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung it in the air before him. Immediately, the swallow trembled, and its feathers were no longer wet. It was as if an empty space had appeared around it, preventing the rain from entering it, and so the falling body of the swallow drew a beautiful arc once again before it landed in the eaves of the courtyard around the tower where Su Ming stayed.

"This swallow seeks shelter in the rain, but the rain falls continuously, and it cannot fight against it. Is this fair?" When Su Ming asked calmly, while Yu Chen Hai remained silent.

"I helped it and allowed it to avoid falling in the rain, so it could hide under the eaves, but the other swallows do not share its serendipity. Is this fair?" Su Ming looked at Yu Chen Hai.

"Brother Su, do you mean that I am the dust fog, and the older generation of my family is the rain that is the might of heavens, so when the rain falls to make me sink into the ground, this is unfair to me?"

After a moment, Yu Chen Hai hesitated for a moment then asked, "The swallows in the rain are also like the competitors in the Yu Family...? Brother Su, please give me a straight answer, what do you mean?" He was a little unclear of what Su Ming was thinking. He had some form of understanding in his heart, but it was not very clear.

Su Ming's expression was calm. He did not answer Yu Chen Hai's words, but instead lifted his right hand to seize the air in the direction of the eaves. Immediately, the swallow he had protected just now was captured and brought into his hand. The swallow did not dare to struggle, but it was shivering.

"I chose to help it instead of the other swallows because it was the closest to me, and because... I liked this feather on its body." Su Ming lifted a feather from the swallow's body with his left hand. With a light tug, he plucked it off. There was a hint of blood at the root of the feather.

He loosened his grip over the swallow, and it immediately flew back under the eaves while shivering nonstop.

Su Ming looked at the feather in his left hand and brought it closer to Yu Chen Hai. His face remained as impassive as ever, and not a hint of emotion could be detected on it. It was as if he was ruthless, but also gentle. When Yu Chen Hai caught sight of it, his heart trembled. He sensed a hint of a devilish and mystifying air about Su Ming, and a chill ran down his spine.

"Fellow Daoist Yu... do you still need my help?" Su Ming smiled faintly and brought the feather before Yu Chen Hai.

Yu Chen Hai fell silent at the sight of that smile, but a moment later, he gritted his teeth and took the feather before standing up and bowing towards Su Ming.

"If you can help me during the auction to become the most striking presence, then I am willing to become that swallow. If there is anything that you need, I will do my best to fulfill your wishes."

As he smiled, Su Ming stood up and patted his clothes before walking towards the door to the courtyard.

"Fairness does not exist in the universe. The only things that exist are deals made under this unfair situation. Let's go. If they want to test me, then I will take the test."

.....

"The Three Gates of Heavenly Dao Art weren't from the four Great True Worlds or even from Sinful Barren Lands. Instead, it came from an alien race known as the Gate of Dao from Divine Essence Star Ocean.

"It's said that this is a divine ability unique to those of that race. They can bring up never-ending illusions, and there is only one main point to their Art: As long as you believe it, it will exist.

"I don't know how to say this clearly either. The Art and the materials to cast it were all obtained by coincidence by those of the older generation from Divine Essence Star Ocean. They could only activate it slightly after many years of research, and it is the test used for the guests who want to be promoted to guest elders within the Yu Family.

"As long as they pass at least one gate, then they can become a guest elder. From what I remember, five guests have managed to pass the test.

"Four of them managed to pass the first Gate of Heavenly Dao, while only one managed to pass the second gate. There has never been a guest who passed the third gate.

"The Three Gates of Heavenly Dao are also what the members of the Yu Family must go through once they reach a certain level of cultivation. However, over the course of numerous years, only eleven people in the Yu Family have passed the first and second gates with different results. Progenitor Yu Ci was the only one who passed through the third gate eight thousand years ago."

There were numerous towers all around them. In the mid of the area made indistinct by the rain, Su Ming walked in front while Yu Chen Hai gave him directions from the side while describing the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao Art. He was still worried, but he felt much better than before.

He had originally thought that Su Ming would not accept the Three Gates Heavenly Dao test, and even if he accepted it, he would most likely not succeed. After all, there had been numerous guests within the Yu Family over the years, but only five people had succeeded.

Most of those did not care much about the world and would isolate themselves to meditate throughout the year. As for the guests who were more active in the family... none of them had managed to pass the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao and could not become guest elders. They could only remain as guests. However, the difference between the rights and resources of guests and guest elders could not be compared.

The request from the older generation from the other lineages was a form of unconcealed suppression in Yu Chen Hai's eyes, but he was unwilling to accept it. That was why when he went to Su Ming's place, he had been furious. Most of his sullenness had been just a show, though, his goal being stimulating Su Ming into taking the test. In fact, he had already prepared a series of words as a follow-up to continue stirring up his target.

However, he did not expect that with just a few words and one gaze, Su Ming had caused his heart to tremble. It was as if everything had become different. Even though Su Ming agreeing to take the test was in alignment with his goal, the change in the process had left Yu Chen Hai feeling like he was on the passive end.

That faint ghostly smile Su Ming had while he plucked the feather off the swallow's body had especially shaken Yu Chen Hai's heart. It was a devilish air that could not be described with words. He did not know whether it had been the right... or the wrong decision to bring Su Ming to the Yu Family.

As complicated thoughts ran through his head, Su Ming's footsteps came to a halt. Yu Chen Hai immediately cast his thoughts away. Instinctively, he had brought Su Ming to an incredibly big square among the numerous towers.

Almost at the instant the two of them arrived, the square distorted as if the universe was moving in reverse and the mountains as well as the rivers were moving. In an instant, the towers around them disappeared along with the square without a trace. What appeared before them was a tall mountain.

That mountain towered over them. It did not look like a mountain, though, but a gigantic statue instead. The summit looked like a head which had long hair falling down its shoulders. It looked as a hideous malicious spirit. The body of the mountain was its body, and it stood sideways to them. The right hand was lifted in the air, and there was a gigantic bat about to fly out on its palm!

From the distance, it looked like a giant was looking down from the summit, half of its body revealed by the side. In fact, since the mountain was a mix of blue and white, it was not that different from the colors of the sky, and at first glance... it was as if the mountain and sky were one, so people might confuse the two as they looked up or straight before them. It was as if the mountain was there, but was not at the same time. What existed was only that gigantic, hideous ghost that had the side of its body turned towards them.

"This is... Dao Avenue Mountain."

At the instant Yu Chen Hai whispered that to Su Ming, several divine thoughts came from the mountain in an incredibly domineering manner. Without any hesitation, they pressed down on Su Ming with an awe-inspiring might that belonged to those who considered themselves superior.

"Cultivator from the world outside, it is your fortune to see Dao Avenue Mountain, now kowtow three times to worship the mountain!"

Su Ming lifted his head, a freezing glare shining in his eyes.

Chapter 864: Dao Avenue's Voice

"Even if I have yet to perfect my Dao, I am not in the habit of easily worshipping anyone." A freezing light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He let out a cold harrumph before he took a step forward.

Since he was going to take Yu Family's test and wanted to blend into Black Ink Planet as fast as possible, he needed a pivot point. This pivot point was the Yu Family and Yu Chen Hai.

With them, he could step straight into the ranks of the cultivators of Black Ink Planet, and his status would also change to someone from the planet instead of an outsider. Once that happened, it would be easier for Su Ming to search for clues about the bald crane. It could also allow him to obtain more answers towards why the Shamans were in this place.

That was why Su Ming chose to help Yu Chen Hai.

In the face of the provocation, he chose to no longer keep a low profile and instead decided to flaunt his abilities within a certain limit. With a cold snort, he took a step forward, and a powerful will erupted swiftly from his body with a bang. That will was born from Su Ming's soul, and it had nothing to do with his cultivation base. This was the monstrous will that had been born when he fought head-on against Ecang's will and forcefully Possessed it.

Will is born from the soul, and divine thought is born from cultivation base. These two are different, but in terms of nature, they are both without form yet the will can create a mighty pressure.

In terms of divine thought, Su Ming could not hope to fight against those that were pressing down on him, but in terms of will, these people were like the light of a firefly compared to Su Ming. They were overestimating their strength by daring to fight against the bright light of the moon.

As Su Ming's will erupted forth, an invisible form of resistance swept through the area in all directions from where he was during that instant. The air around him distorted, and ripples spread out intensely from where he was. The one step Su Ming took forward caused the weather to change and the sky to dim.

As booming sounds spread through the area, the divine thoughts that had come to push down on him immediately fell backwards.

Yu Chen Hai was following behind Su Ming. Once he witnessed all this, his breathing quickened, and when he looked towards Su Ming, there was shock and extreme joy within his gaze. He had valued Su Ming greatly since the beginning, and after the scene with the swallow in the rain, he had also become respectful of him. However, all of these could not be compared to the shock he felt at the moment.

After all, this was the first time he saw Su Ming attack!

He knew clearly the levels of cultivation possessed by those of the older generation who had sent those divine thoughts towards Su Ming just now, and it was precisely because he knew of this that he had been shocked by his strength.

Almost at the moment the divine thoughts around Su Ming tumbled backwards, low shouts immediately came from Dao Avenue Mountain. Five figures turned into five long arcs and charged towards Su Ming.

As they came over, divine abilities instantly manifested in the area, having been executed by the five people. Due to those abilities, it people seemed like they had turned into sharp swords. Instantly, their killing intent spread out in all directions.

"Needless to say, once I perfect my Dao, you will not have the right to make me worship anything. Even this Dao Avenue Mountain does not have the right to make me worship it," Su Ming said lightly and took a second step. At the instant he did so, the palm contained in his left eye shone.

Boom!

The sky changed, and a gigantic palm appeared and came charging down at the ground. This might have seemed to have occurred over a long period of time, but in truth, in the blink of an eye, that palm had already crashed into the five people's divine abilities.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Violent gusts of wind swept through the area, and the world trembled. The gigantic palm that Su Ming had formed disappeared into the sky, and a violent jolt wrecked the five people who were rushing towards him. Their bodies froze in midair for an instant, and they came to a complete halt. Their faces were then revealed. They were five old men whose gazes alternated between shock and bewilderment while their faces radiated sullenness.

As for Su Ming, when booming sounds echoed in the air and the gigantic palm disappeared, he took three steps back. With each step, the ground would tremble, and when he took his third step back, a dash of red appeared on his cheeks.

Three of the five were at the peak of the middle stage of World Plane, one had attained great completion of the middle stage, and the last of them was even halfway through to reaching the later stage. The combined attack of these five people was equivalent to an attack of a cultivator in the later stage of World Plane Realm.

It might have seemed like Su Ming had gotten the short end of the stick, but the shock Yu Chen Hai experienced was incomparable. He clearly knew that the five people from the older generation in his family had worked together to fight against Su Ming's divine ability. They might have seemed to have gained the upper hand, but in truth, it was only on the surface. While Su Ming might have stepped back, he had not been injured in the slightest, and it was a telling sign of how strong he was.

When Yu Chen Hai saw that the five people from the older generation had become wary of Su Ming while they remained in midair with sullen expressions on their faces, a myriad of thoughts flickered through his mind. He then took a few steps forward and immediately spoke.

"Progenitors, what is the meaning of this?! You were the ones who mentioned that you wanted to test senior Su. Now that I've brought our guest here, you're preventing him from taking it! I might be of the younger generation in the family, but I do know that there is a clear mention of this within the rules of our family!"

As Yu Chen Hai spoke, he addressed Su Ming as a senior. While keeping a low profile, he intentionally raised Su Ming's status. As his words echoed in the air coldly, the five people in the sky let out cold harrumphs. Hesitance had appeared in their hearts due to Su Ming's strength, which was why they had decided to use what Yu Chen Hai had said as an excuse to not attack. An old man with white hair among them cast Su Ming a profound look before he pointed towards Dao Avenue Mountain.

"Sir, since you want to challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Mountain, then by all means go on ahead. This place is the first gate!"

Su Ming had already used his power to demonstrate his level of cultivation, and it was a strength that left these five people apprehensive. They were no longer willing to continue making things difficult for him, much less mention the matter about wanting him to worship the mountain earlier.

To them, Su Ming challenging the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao was an extremely conceited act. Over the course of years, very few people had succeeded within the Yu Family. Even if he had extraordinary power, there had been others who had even higher levels of cultivation who had tried to challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Da. In the end, there were only a few who succeeded, which was a telling sign that the deciding

factor for clearing the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao did not lay in a person's level of cultivation.

In fact, they could already imagine how this person would walk out of Dao Avenue Mountain in an incredibly pathetic state before long. At that time, he would naturally know what it means to overestimate and humiliate oneself.

Su Ming cast a cold glance at Dao Avenue Mountain.

"This Dao Avenue Mountain originally did not belong to the Yu Family, but is something that came from Divine Essence Star Ocean. One of the Progenitors of our family had brought it back in the past. It has another name: Dao Avenue Receives Bats.

"That is the name for the first gate of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. There is a second gate after the first, and it is known as the Sun and Moon Shines Together.

"Senior, I will have to ask for your favor in this." Yu Chen Hai sucked in a deep breath and bowed deeply towards Su Ming.

Su Ming's expression remained calm. He averted his gaze from Dao Avenue Mountain and cast Yu Chen Hai a glance before he spoke flatly.

"It doesn't matter what sort of thoughts you harbor in your head, but do not forget the swallow's feather." Once he said that, he swung his arm and walked towards Dao Avenue Mountain. He moved swiftly, like a rainbow, and in an instant, he arrived at the mountain, then flew straight into the gaping mouth of the hideous ghost's face that was the summit.

Su Ming's words echoed in Yu Chen Hai's ears, and his heart froze. The voice seemed to have turned into a brand in his mind and refused to leave even after a long time. In the end, it turned into a purplish gold runic symbol that was left behind deep within his mind in the mid of his shock. It seemed like an illusion, but also felt real, and he could not distinguish whether it was real or fake.

As Su Ming disappeared into Dao Avenue Mountain, the five old men from Yu Family sat down cross-legged in the sky and completely ignored Yu Chen Hai. No one else came to this place; they were the only ones in the area.

Originally, challenging the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao was a huge matter in Yu Family, but as time passed and almost every single person who tried failed, it gradually turned into a decoration. If it had not been because the rules in the family stated that each member of the family must challenge the mountain once in their lives and if it was not the only path for guests to become guest elders, no one would even remember the existence of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao.

Because of that, Su Ming's challenge of them that should have caught the Yu Family's attention only had a few people watching.

"This person will definitely fail and walk out within three days. We just need to wait here for three days."

"Three days? Even if he has extraordinary power, there were only a few, both from the guests and the family, who could last for more than ten days in the first gate. Some managed to continue to seven days, but most failed with a day, or even a half."

"This person can at most last one day."

"True. Based on past experiences, those who last for more than ten days are considered to have passed the first gate, and Dao Avenue's Voice will speak up, but since ancient times, very few have succeeded. This person had been really conceited just now, I wonder if he will still act the same way when he comes out."

As the five people spoke with cold sneers on their faces, Yu Chen Hai sat in the distance quietly and watched Dao Avenue Mountain with his heart filled with nervousness. He hoped that Su Ming would succeed, and that hope turned into a great desire in his heart.

As Yu Chen Hai waited, time trickled by. Two hours, four hours, six hours... Half a day passed. The expectation in Yu Chen Hai's eyes grew stronger. As his heart pounded against his chest, he kept his gaze fixed on Dao Avenue Mountain.

Gradually, when an entire day passed, the five old men's expressions changed, but they were still certain that Su Ming would not last for more than three days in the first gate.

However, this certainty in their hearts was shaken slightly when the second day passed.

"This person is quite remarkable. He actually managed to stay in there for two days, but he should be struggling in there right now. He won't last for more than three days!"

"Hmph. This is the strangeness of the first gate. The longer a person stays in there, the more changes will occur. Didn't we also last for nearly three days in the past? Just watch, when the sun sets tomorrow, this person will be unable to persevere."

When the third day passed, the excitement in Yu Chen Hai's heart had already reached its limit. Red filled his eyes, and his body trembled lightly. At that moment, it was as if there was a voice shouting excitedly in his heart.

'You have to succeed!' Yu Chen Hai's breathing quickened. Compared to his excitement, the expressions of the five men had turned incredibly dark.

That dark mood of theirs turned into shock and disbelief when the fourth day passed. At that time, they stood up swiftly.

This was because a shrill voice that was like the screech of a malicious ghost spread out in all directions from Dao Avenue Mountain.

This voice came from the ghost's mouth, and it hadn't been heard for several thousands of years. This voice... was Dao Avenue's Voice, and it meant that someone had cleared the First Gate of Heavenly Dao!

"Dao Avenue's Voice... This-this is impossible!"

The five people's disbelief and Yu Chen Hai's indescribable shock as well as extreme joy after being momentarily stunned became increasingly stronger as the ghost's voice echoed in the air.

At that moment, the weather changed and roars rose into the sky. All the members of the Yu Family heard the ghost's voice no matter what they were doing. In fact, some of the old monsters in the family that isolated themselves throughout the year to train opened their eyes.

In the span of a breath, numerous silhouettes charged over to Dao Avenue Mountain from all directions.

Chapter 865: Bat

In four days, Su Ming had made this sort of sound come out from Dao Avenue Mountain. This was something that had never happened before in the Yu Family. Most of those who cleared the first gate could only cause Dao Avenue's Voice to shout out after they had lasted for ten days.

Even the only Progenitor who had cleared all Three Gates of Heavenly Dao within the Yu Family had used seven days to bring out this sound.

When the voice rang out once again, it immediately caused a ruckus within the entire Yu Family. The silhouettes of people charged towards the place from all directions, and the five old men in the area sported changes in their expressions. The shock in their hearts caused their breathing to quicken slightly.

Only Yu Chen Hai clenched his fists excitedly.

"Who managed to clear the first gate out of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao?!" At that moment, a buzzing sound reached them, and along with it was the first member of the Yu Family who had rushed over.

He was a middle-aged man who had a fair complexion and had no facial hair. He was dressed in a long gray robe, and his long hair was untied. He appeared from the air to stand before the five old men.

These five people immediately stood up and wrapped their fists in their palms to bow towards the middle-aged man.

"Greetings, Third Family Elder," the five people said at the same time as respect appeared on their faces. They might all be members of the Yu Family, and the middle-aged man before their eyes did not seem to be as old as they were, but these five people knew that the middle-aged man's true age was not to be known.

Several thousands of years ago, this person had appeared before them with this appearance. Now, thousands of years had passed, but he remained the same as he did in the past. Besides, even if they were older than he was, they would still have to be respectful towards him.

It was especially so since this middle-aged man looked almost identical to a certain ancestor within the family ancestral hall, which they would see every single time when they held the ceremony to offer sacrifices to their ancestors once every sixty years.

Even if this was not mentioned, just his status alone would similarly be able to make these five people unable to regard themselves as his equals. They had to be respectful towards him because he was the third family elder of the Yu Family.

That was why he was known as the Third Family Elder.

In the face of the middle-aged man's questions, the five people hesitated for a moment after they greeted him, but then still answered in low murmurs, not daring to hide anything. "The child of the family, Chen Hai, tried to obtain the support of somebody, and he agreed to come to this place to go through the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao to test."

"Hmm? When has the Yu Family ever needed our temporary guests to challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao when the children of our family try to bring them to our side?" When the middle-aged man spoke lightly, he cast his gaze towards Yu Chen Hai, who had stood up a long time ago and had a respectful expression on his face.

"Greetings, Third Family Elder." Yu Chen Hai was feeling slightly anxious. With his rank in the family, he could not meet this middle-aged man on normal occasions. He could only see him in the distance when they held the ceremony to offer sacrifices to their ancestors. At that moment, he quickly knelt down on the ground.

"Oppressing others and fighting among the lineages. This is the interaction between all of you in the younger generation. I will not interfere with this... but using the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao... The five of you, after this, go and isolate yourselves. Do not

let me see you for a thousand years," the middle-aged man said flatly, then directed his attention to Yu Chen Hai before speaking languidly towards him. "You are a descendant of Yu Mai's blood, correct?"

"Third Family Elder, I am indeed a descendant of Progenitor Yu Mai." Yu Chen Hai did not dare get up as he answered in a low murmur.

"Tell me what happened." The middle-aged man placed his hands behind his back and looked at Dao Avenue Mountain as he waited for Yu Chen Hai's words.

Yu Chen Hai quickly told him the entire process of how he came to know Su Ming, from the start right to the end. As he spoke, other people came one after another from all directions. When they saw the middle-aged man, looks of respect appeared on their faces and they bent their backs to greet him.

When Yu Chen Hai finished speaking, there were nearly one hundred members of Yu Family in the area. They had surrounded the two of them while listening to Yu Chen Hai recounting his tale.

The middle-aged man's expression remained as calm as before while he listened. When the tale was finished, he asked, "What is the name of the temporary guest you tried to bring to your side?"

"His name is Su Ming," Yu Chen Hai immediately answered in a low voice.

"Su Ming..." The middle-aged man didn't say anything more, but kept his gaze fixed on Dao Avenue Mountain.

"Within four days, you managed to make Dao Avenue's Voice appear. How did you do it...? I wonder if you will fail after this, or you will be able to make the Spirit Bat fly after a few days to bring out the second gate's phenomenon of the sun and moon shining at the same time." The middle-aged man remained calm as he spoke softly. He seemed to be mumbling to himself, but also seemed as if he was talking to the others beside him.

Time trickled by. The Third Family Elder's presence in the place caused Yu Chen Hai to be incredibly nervous, and it was the same for the other members of the family. Even the noise of the discussions wasn't present, so the place fell into a dead silence.

.....

Su Ming was sitting on an unbroken chain of mountains. When he looked over the area, he saw boundless land. Mountains rose and fell, and there were valleys everywhere as well as pieces of flatland.

Over here, he forgot the flow of time. He looked at the sky calmly, and the sun, moon, and stars in his eyes spun. The Illusionary Art he had come to understand on his own was executed to its limit during the past few days.

However... he still could not prevent his body from rotting away and being slowly destroyed. Most of his body, which was still in a seated position, had already decayed, to the point that there were only bones left.

From the moment Su Ming stepped into Dao Avenue Mountain, he had been sitting cross-legged in this place without moving. He did not sense any danger in this boundless world, and it was as if there was no threat that lay in this place.

However, he did not move an inch... because the ground, mountains, flatlands, valleys, and everything here had caused his heart to tremble at the moment he first saw them upon his arrival.

He was definitely the first cultivator who had recognized what this place was at first glance among all those who had challenged the first gate of Dao Avenue Mountain.

He recognized what this place was, because several years ago, he had seen the same thing with his own eyes when he was in the region where the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World were stationed. It was also because of this thing chasing after his life that the ten Ecang souls had burst forth from Western Ring Nebula's foreign land to fight against it in a great battle.

A Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!

The ground beneath his body was the palm of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. The mountain ranges were the palm lines, the flatlands were the empty spaces between the palm lines, and the valleys were the crevices caused by those palm lines.

However, this land was even bigger than the one he had seen in the past!

This made Su Ming remember the gigantic statue of the mountain when he was outside Dao Avenue Mountain - the existence that was akin to a ferocious ghost and the huge bat that could not fly out from its right hand.

The bat's color was black, just like the color of his body as he continued decaying.

"As long as you believe it, it will exist," Su Ming mumbled. These were the words Yu Chen Hai had told him. It was what the Yu Family had concluded based on the experiences they obtained. However, even if people learned of it beforehand, it was still of little use. There were very few from the Yu Family who managed to clear the first gate.

"There is a power that I've never come into contact with before surrounding this place. This power is very strong, and it's great enough to exist together with the universe..." Su Ming said softly as his body continued rotting away. As he spoke, the bones in the places they had decayed started disintegrating. From the distance, he looked as if he had turned into a bat.

A bat that could not fly out from a palm.

Chapter 866: As Long as You Believe

Su Ming looked at the changes in his body calmly, taking note of how he was turning into a bat as his body rotted away and disintegrated. He felt the wings rapidly growing out of his back, and with a whoosh, those wings unfolded behind him. Once they were stretched out, it showed up that they were hundreds of feet long. This gave Su Ming a strange, enchanting air.

'A bat...' He smiled faintly. This caused him to remember the Fire Berserkers and the Wings of the Moon, which he saw when he was still young.

'The outward appearance is rather similar, but what is inside is completely different.' Su Ming closed his eyes and did not bother about the changes in his body. He continued letting time pass by.

He had no idea how much time had passed, but when he opened his eyes once again, his body had turned completely into that big black bat.

It felt incredibly real, so real that even Su Ming could not help but feel slightly shaken.

'The bat, just like the one I saw on the right palm of that malicious ghost when I was outside Dao Avenue Mountain. However, illusions of this level aren't strong enough to affect my intellect.'

Light flashed past Su Ming's eyes. He let out a cold harrumph, and the sun, moon, and stars in his eyes spun rapidly. Immediately, he shuddered, and flesh as well as blood rapidly grew back on his body.

From the distance, he looked to be rapidly changing from the bat into a human. The process lasted for only the span of a few breaths, and at the instant Su Ming stood up, he was no longer a bat, but had returned to his original body.

Almost at the instant he did that, the ground, which Su Ming knew was really a gigantic palm, trembled, and he sensed something familiar. The five fingers of the palm were rapidly furling back with loud booming sounds, intending to crush his body inside the palm.

'Since it's an illusion, then I'm omnipotent in this place.'

A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. He leaped up from the ground and charged towards the sky at full speed. As he rushed up, the world rumbled.

The first finger charged towards Su Ming from above. That finger replaced the sky, and as it descended on him, it closed in on him instantly. Su Ming's expression remained calm, and when he lifted his right hand, a sun manifested in the air. When he extended his left hand, the moon appeared. As he moved forward, stars began to follow after him. He had used the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon to its full extent.

Boom!

Su Ming pushed his right hand against the first finger that was descending on him. As loud booming sounds reverberated in the air, the finger was bounced thousands of feet away. Then, the second finger, which was right behind the first, came down on Su Ming.

Boom! Boom!

The sun and moon in Su Ming's hands rotated as they crashed into the second finger. It was bounced off after the clash, and Su Ming became even faster. As he flew up, the third and the fourth fingers swiftly came down on him.

"Stars, sun, moon!"

Su Ming swung his arms forward, and the sun in his left hand as well as the moon in his right hand accompanied by the stars behind him rushed out together to crash against the two gigantic fingers.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Loud bangs surged into the sky. As the weather changed, the two fingers trembled so violently that they froze for a moment. Su Ming rushed out swiftly. Just as he was about to fly out of the ground made of that palm, the thumb descended swiftly on him as if the sky had collapsed.

The whistling sound was piercing to the ears. At the instant the thumb descended, the Divine Essence Runic Symbols immediately appeared around Su Ming's body. They gathered on him, turning his body into a sharp sword that thrust forward at the incoming thumb.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The world trembled. The sword pierced through the incoming thumb, but did not bring with it any blood.

Su Ming rushed out of the gigantic palm. At the instant he did so, he felt as if he had broken free of some sort of shackles. The runic symbols around him disappeared, revealing his body, and he looked downwards...

A smile appeared on Su Ming's face.

He saw Dao Avenue Mountain, the five older members of the Yu Family sitting cross-legged not too far away while meditating, and also Yu Chen Hai.

At that moment, Yu Chen Hai's face was filled with excitement. As for the five older members of the Yu Family, their faces were dark and sullen.

Su Ming smiled faintly. His body shrank swiftly, but at the instant he descended, his expression changed. A gentle voice spoke slowly by his ears.

"All beings in the world possess life. These forms of life cannot live long. However, my race unraveled the secret of nature by coincidence. If we offer up lives, we can obtain eternal life.

"Those who clear the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao can obtain eternal life. Thou hast cleared the first gate, and I shalt bestow upon thee the Art of Vitality, allowing thee to take others' life to allow thyself to possess limitless life."

The voice was coming from the mouth of the malicious ghost of Dao Avenue Mountain. When its word entered Su Ming's ears, they turned into a vortex in his heart. This vortex turned slowly, and a great amount of life force spread out faintly from within it.

Su Ming was momentarily stunned.

During the time he was stunned, he descended from the sky and landed on the ground.

Yu Chen Hai immediately took a few steps forward and went before him. He bent his back to bow to him with an excited expression on his face, but just as he was about to speak after he bowed, his expression changed drastically.

"Senior Su, you... you..."

Yu Chen Hai's voice turned into a shrill scream of pain in the blink of an eye. He retreated swiftly, and as he moved back, his body began decaying rapidly. Within an instant, he had already rotted away until he was only bones. When Su Ming looked over, Yu Chen Hai's body completely shattered and turned into ashes.

Wisps of life force surged rapidly into Su Ming's body. This life force contained years of life, and an indescribable feeling immediately rose in Su Ming's body.

He could sense clearly that his life had become even more exuberant, but his expression changed. This was not what he wanted. In fact, he did not even want to kill Yu Chen Hai.

'How could this be? This is...'

Su Ming looked at Yu Chen Hai remains with a dumbfounded gaze. He spread his Atman outwards and found that he truly could not sense Yu Chen Hai's presence anymore. All of this was telling him that... Yu Chen Hai had truly died.

At the instant Su Ming was shocked by this scene, the expressions of the five older members of the Yu Family in the distance changed drastically. They stood up swiftly and disbelief appeared on their faces, as if they did not expect that Su Ming would kill someone, and Yu Chen Hai, at that.

"How dare you kill a person of the Yu Family?! What nerve!" As the expressions of the five people changed, four of them charged towards Su Ming quickly. The other person lifted his right arm and swung it towards the sky. Immediately, the sky rumbled, and a layer of blood-red clouds appeared. These clouds came out of nowhere. In the blink of an eye, they turned into gigantic letters that formed the word 'Jade' in the sky.

This was a clearly a signal to notify the other members of the family.

All of these things were happening too quickly and too suddenly. Su Ming was completely unprepared for it. At that moment, the four people closed in on him with low shouts. However, the moment they did so and Su Ming looked towards them, the four let out shrill screams of pain. With shock and pain on their faces, they immediately gave up on moving forward and instead retreated rapidly.

They had only retreated dozens of feet backwards when their bodies began decaying rapidly, like what had happened to Yu Chen Hai. In an instant, they turned into ashes, and their life force surged into Su Ming's body, allowing Su Ming to experience that comfortable feeling of his vitality becoming even more exuberant while he was still at a loss.

This comfortable feeling was enough to make a person addicted to it. It was a feeling that was difficult to describe with words.

The only old man left had a pale expression on his face at that moment. As he retreated swiftly, long arcs appeared around him. They were the members of the Yu Family rushing over after they had seen the blood clouds.

'How can this be...?'

Su Ming held back the indescribably comfortable feeling in his body. He could already feel a slight addiction to it, which made him eager to obtain even more of it, but he held himself back forcefully.

'There's something wrong with the power in me!'

Su Ming gritted his teeth hard and flew up to charge into the sky. He instinctively wanted to leave the place.

However, by the time he flew up, the members of the Yu Family had already arrived. Nearly one hundred people surrounded the area, and all of them charged towards Su Ming. Yet the moment they closed in on him, shrill screams of pain immediately escaped the lips of everyone within three thousand feet around him. While they screamed, their bodies turned into ashes. Wisps of life force surged into Su Ming's body, and he could not help but let out a roar towards the sky as that comfortable feeling appeared in him again.

'Just what is this power?!'

Su Ming could feel that he had lost some control over his own body. He gritted his teeth again and rushed forward, but almost one thousand members of the Yu Family had come to surround him. While seething in anger, they executed numerous divine abilities.

"Don't come here, leave!" Su Ming roared, but it was already too late. At the instant the near one thousand people around him got close to him, they let out screams of pain and turned into ashes. The comfortable feeling in Su Ming's body seemed to have stirred up a windstorm in his mind, and it lost some of its clearness. The shadow of the gigantic bat appeared around him right away.

That shadow seemed to be laughing ferociously as it was forming swiftly.

Su Ming pressed his hands against his head, and red appeared in his eyes. The light shining in them was filled with greed and madness. His body swayed abruptly, and he immediately rushed towards the incoming members of the Yu Family.

Wherever he went, shrill screams of pain would ring in the air endlessly. The comfortable feeling in his body grew even stronger, and the shadow of the bat behind him became clearer.

However, the struggles in his heart also reached the peak at that instant.

'Something's not right, could it be that I'm still in the illusion?!' Su Ming's face filled with a ferociousness. He forced his body to stop, and he trembled.

.....

Beyond Dao Avenue Mountain in Yu Family's square within Black Ink Planet was Yu Chen Hai with a nervous expression on his face. At that moment, he saw a faint light shining on the bat in the malicious ghost's palm.

The five old men from the Yu Family beside him were as white as sheets. Around them, there were hundreds of people from the Yu Family who had arrived after hearing the ghost's voice. All of them did not make a sound as they looked at Dao Avenue Mountain.

Yu Family's middle-aged Third Family Elder had a calm expression on his face, but a brilliant light shone in his eyes as he looked at the shining bat. No one knew what he was thinking about.

Chapter 867: The Sun and Moon Shines Together

Bang!

Su Ming coughed up a mouthful of blood and removed his right fist from his chest. The punch he had just thrown was aimed against his own body. The intense pain coursing through his body cleared up his mind, but even if it did, everything around him was still around.

The entire house of Yu Family had become empty, and the area was filled with dead silence.

Su Ming did not know how many people he had killed, and neither did he know how many people had their life force absorbed when they got close to him.

He stood on the ground, just outside Dao Avenue Mountain. There was no one alive around him. The sky was gradually turning darker, but the hideous expression of the malicious ghost on Dao Avenue Mountain was incredibly clear.

Su Ming's expression was filled with anguish. He could not tell whether everything around him was just an illusion and he was truly in this current condition or whether this was fake.

"As long as you believe it, it will exist." Yu Chen Hai's reminder echoed in Su Ming's ears.

"I've never believed in it, so could it be that all of this is true...?" As Su Ming mumbled this under his breath, his eyes sparkled.

'I'll know whether this is real or fake if I go to see other places in Black Ink Planet!'

Su Ming moved, becoming a long arc. But just as he was about to leave the grounds, which had become silent, his body trembled.

Strong light then shone in his eyes. His breathing quickened. As he remained in the sky, he turned his head around slowly and stared fixedly at Dao Avenue Mountain.

He remembered now. It was not true that he had not believed in this since the start to the end. At the instant he walked out of the palm and looked towards Yu Chen Hai as well as the five old men on the ground, he smiled.

That might have seemed like a simple smile, but it showed that Su Ming believed what he saw at that instant.

When he looked towards Yu Chen Hai and the others, he had thought that he had cleared the first gate.

It was wrong. It was also at that moment that everything had begun. It was precisely because he had believed during that moment that everything changed.

Su Ming fell silent. After a long moment, he sucked in a deep breath and returned to the ground. When he sat down, a dark light appeared in his eyes, showing off his sullen mood.

'What a powerful Illusory Art. No wonder it's rare for anyone to pass this test even though the members of the Yu Family know of the secrets in the Art.'

Su Ming slowly closed his eyes. At the instant he did so, he lifted his right hand. The power of the Art of Time from the Abyss Builders was contained in his right hand, and he was ready to have his finger tap the center of his brows. Once that happened, the power of time would immediately spread out.

Then, he could change the flow of time and allow this place to return to the time before the change happened.

'Let's see whether your race's Illusory Art is stronger or whether the Abyss Builders' divine ability is stronger!'

At the instant Su Ming was about to touch the center of his brows with his right index finger, his finger suddenly froze. He opened his eyes, and a bright sparkle shone within them.

"That's wrong..." He remained silent for a long time before he put his finger down. "If I use the Abyss Builders' Art of Time to fight against this, then it means that I believe in this illusion. It doesn't matter whether it's an illusion or whether it's the truth, as long as I believe it, it will exist."

"There are plenty of ways to understand this sentence..." Su Ming whispered softly to himself. After a moment, he did not use any other method and instead chose to just sit quietly. Once he closed his eyes, he let his heart sink into a state of calmness.

Shrill screams of pain gradually rang in his ears, but he did not open his eyes.

After those screams of pain came countless pleas for mercy, but he did not open his eyes.

Time passed, but Su Ming continued sit with his eyes closed. No matter what he heard, his heart remained unshaken, and in the mid of this state of calmness, he did not think of anything.

"Su Ming..." a faint voice said into his ears. It was Bai Ling's voice. Su Ming trembled. He looked as if he was about to open his eyes, but after a moment, he calmed down.

"Su Ming... you grew up..." When the elder's voice reached his ears, he remained silent.

"Are you... my son...? Are you the baby I held in my arms in the past...?" a faint woman's voice said with a tone that felt familiar yet unfamiliar at the same time to Su Ming.

"Su Ming, I'm Lei Chen . What're you doing, sitting here? Aren't we supposed to go to the mountain to pick herbs?" This was Lei Chen's voice.

"My dear disciple, I'll let you see what is the sky and what is the earth!" said Tian Xie Zi's voice.

After that came second senior brother, eldest senior brother, Hu Zi, and all the other people from his memories. Their voices reached him one after another.

Then, Su Ming opened his eyes.

At the instant he did so, he saw many people, many sights, and many scenes from the past he could no longer see.

He simply watched all of these silently, allowing himself to see it all as time continued to pass for his friends, family, and for these scenes, until an unknown amount of time had went by.

"As long as you believe it, it will exist."

"I don't believe it." Su Ming stood up and moved forward. The old friends he came into contact with all disintegrated, and the ground he moved past gradually faded in color.

The land behind him tumbled about. The layers of earth rolled around like the layers of skin that fell off from a snake as it shed it. As they disseminated in succession, the ground... was still the land that had the shape of a palm.

His old friends, family, and the familiar sights were calling to him from behind him, but as Su Ming moved into the distance, they slowly turned into emptiness. However, even after he had already traveled very far, the sky remained as boundless as ever, and the ground was still in the shape of the palm.

Su Ming's hair danced in the air. With the calmness in his heart and the relaxed manner in his gait, he continued walking forward. The sky gradually darkened, but in the mid of that darkness, a bright entrance appeared in front of him. He got closer to it, and when he walked out, the darkness was no longer around. He saw a bright piece of sky and the Yu Family's square. He saw Yu Chen Hai and the five old men on the square, along with hundreds of other people. He also saw a middle-aged man standing right in front of the crowd.

When the members of the Yu Family on the entire square saw Su Ming, buzzing instantly rose into the air. It mattered little whether one considered the members of the family or the guests, it had been a long time since someone had managed to clear the first gate!

Yet at that moment, they had witnessed a success. They also saw the bat from the palm that belonged to the malicious ghost that was Dao Avenue Mountain letting out a brilliant light at the instant Su Ming walked out. As it spread out in all directions, a hazy feeling was created.

"Fellow Daoist, congratulations on clearing the first gate of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao!" The middle-aged Third Family Elder in the crowd put on a smile, then wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming as a greeting.

Yu Chen Hai was looking at Su Ming with an excited expression as he stood by Third Family Elder's side. The hope and excitement in his eyes could not be described with words. He knew that the moment Su Ming had walked out of the first gate, his status in the family had risen by a huge margin.

As the light from the bat spread out, more people from the Yu Family rushed into the square from all directions. This was an incredibly important matter to the entire Yu Family.

When Su Ming walked out of Dao Avenue Mountain, he looked at the crowd beneath him. Then, with a calm expression, he wrapped his fist in his palm to greet the middle-aged man.

He did not speak, because at the instant he walked out, the bat on the palm that belonged to the malicious ghost shone with a boundless light, and booming sounds instantly rose into the air above Dao Avenue Mountain.

As they spread through the entire Yu Family and shook the sky, distortions appeared in a large portion of the sky, and two gigantic mountains manifested in the area of the distorted sky.

Instead of saying that they were two mountains, it would be more accurate to say that they were two huge statues. One of them was entirely black and had a ferocious expression on its face. It was holding loosely onto a red sun in its right hand.

The other statue was shining with moonlight, and it had a more indifferent expression on its face. It looked like a woman, and on her right hand was a moon. It was shining with a gentle light that illuminated the ground.

"The Sun and Moon Shine Together!"

"We finally saw the phenomenon of the sun and moon shining together. This is the second gate of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, and it will only appear when the first gate has been cleared."

"Since ancient times, this gate has only appeared a few times. It's the first time I've seen it in my life, I feel truly fortunate to see it."

"The Sun and Moon Shine Together is even stronger than Dao Avenue Mountain. My dear guest, I wonder if you will be able to clear this gate!"

The buzzing of the crowd rose in the square. Once the mountains appeared, more members of the Yu Family rushed towards the square from all directions. There were even a large number of those who had previously not been interested in this rushing over.

There was even a long arc with an indescribably domineering air arriving from the distance, which then turned into an old man with crimson hair. He stopped beside Third Family Elder.

At the moment he arrived, all the members of the family around the area felt their hearts tremble, as if this man's arrival could make the ground shiver.

"Greetings, Second Family Elder!" All the members of the family besides the Third Family Elder bowed respectfully towards the old man with crimson hair.

Yu Chen Hai's expression became even more excited as he, too, bowed down and worshiped the old man.

As for the five old men who had previously deliberately made things difficult for Su Ming, they showed unceasing reverence on their faces as well, even if they were as white as sheets of paper.

The old man with crimson hair ignored the members of the family around him worshiping him and looked at Su Ming standing outside Dao Avenue Mountain, then asked languidly with sparkling eyes, "Who brought this guest to our house?"

"This young boy from Yu Mai's lineage brought him here." The Third Family Elder smiled faintly by the side and cast a glance at the excited Yu Chen Hai.

The old man with crimson hair turned his head around and looked at Yu Chen Hai. A faint smile appeared on his face. Once he nodded, he looked at Su Ming, who had his head lifted to look at the statues of the Sun and Moon Shine Together while standing in the sky. Then, he wrapped his fist in his palm in a greeting and spoke to Su Ming.

"Fellow Daoist, since you cleared the first gate, then from now on, you are the guest of the Yu Family. You can make any requests you want of us; we have always valued our guests highly in the Yu Family.

"If you manage to clear the second gate, then you will become our guest elder, and you will have an incomparably respected status. You will be equal to the two of us!"

As he spoke, the two statues of the Sun and Moon Shine Together shone with a light that reached the ends of earth. A loud boom drowned out all other sounds. When it traveled in all directions, Su Ming lifted his foot and walked toward the Sun and Moon Shine Together.

He could choose not to challenge the second gate, but Su Ming had his own thoughts. When he was in the first gate, he had sensed the strange power contained within it.

That power was a strange force that he had never seen before. As long as he believed in it, it would exist.

This was an illusion, but was also not an illusion. Su Ming wanted to understand how this power worked, and even wanted to be in control of this power to fuse it into his own Illusion of the Stars, Sun, and Moon. Once he managed to do so, his Illusion of the Stars, Sun, and Moon would become incredibly powerful.

1. Bai Ling: Su Ming's first love.
2. Lei Chen: Su Ming's best friend.

Chapter 868: Believe in Me and Worship Me

Su Ming's eyes shone with a glint. Under the gazes of all the people in the square beneath him, he walked towards the Sun and Moon Shine Together!

When his body disappeared into the statue holding onto the sun, expectation immediately appeared on all the faces of the people in the square.

It was especially so for Yu Chen Hai. In fact, he even had a feeling like he was dreaming. He was afraid that all of this will show to not be true. Instinctively, he pinched his own arm. His breathing quickened, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

"Over the years, most of those who cleared the second gate needed nearly half a month to do so. I wonder... if this person will succeed or fail," the old man with the crimson hair said softly.

"Second brother, are you still lamenting over your failure in the past? Big brother managed to clear the second gate, but you failed." The middle-aged man beside him smiled faintly.

"Let's not talk about the past. I do hope that he succeeds. The Progenitor is going to be in his isolation for a long time, but he once said before he entered isolation that if anyone clears the third gate, he will come out.

"Too much time has passed now, and the development of the Yu Family in Black Ink Planet has not been successful. The rise of the Lie Shan Family has left us in a very passive position." The old man with the crimson hair shook his head.

"The level of cultivation of this cultivator named Su Ming is slightly unclear. Even I couldn't find any clues about it just now. But I do think that the second gate will be his limit. Even now, I still can't forget the experiences I had when I was going through the second gate, and I don't have the courage to challenge it again. I'm afraid... of losing myself.

"As for the third gate... It's impossible." The middle-aged man sighed.

"Losing yourself... Ha." The old man with crimson hair sighed.

"As for Lie Shan Family... Hmph, if it wasn't for the Progenitor entering isolation, how could that Lie Shan Xiu have been able to achieve hegemony? But there are plenty of rumors regarding this Lie Shan Xiu's origins. We've investigated him for many years, but we still haven't managed to find his real background."

"With his own power, he managed to build a family that can threaten our Yu Family in just a little over ten thousand years. We can't underestimate this person. But I've heard that there's a high possibility that he came from Divine Essence Star Ocean." The old man with crimson hair's eyes sparkled when he spoke languidly.

"It's most likely true." The middle-aged man nodded.

As these two people spoke to each other, Su Ming opened his eyes within the statues of the Sun and Moon Shine Together in the sky.

Before he stepped into the statue, there had been piercing light shining into his eyes, which was why he had decided to close his eyes and walk over. At that moment, when he opened his eyes, he saw a vast ocean.

The sounds of waves crashing against the surface of the ocean spread in all directions. Sea breeze blew against his face, and the smell of an ocean filled the air.

Su Ming was standing on a cliff. When he looked around, he saw two statues in the ocean. Half of their bodies were submerged in the ocean, and the other half was standing above like mountains.

These two statues were what Su Ming had seen previously - The Sun and Moon Shine Together.

"What... do you want...?" A mighty voice rang out like thunderous booms. It echoed in the air and traveled into Su Ming's heart. That booming voice came from the mouth of the sun statue.

"Believe and worship the Sun God and Moon Goddess, and you will obtain everything," a voice said from the moon statue's mouth. It was very gentle, and it could make a person relax because of it.

"Living creatures that can come into the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao all possess extraordinary tenacity. Those who did not lose in the first gate can obtain the protection of the Gate of Dao race.

"Tell us your desires, and we will let you obtain them." The voice from the sun statue resounded in the air once again, and a glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

"Who are you?" he asked calmly.

"We are gods!" This time, the statues of the sun and moon spoke together. The fusion of the man's and the woman's voices formed a strange tone. As it echoed in the air, the dignified feeling they exuded became even stronger.

"The Gate of Dao race worships the eternal God of Time. I am the God of Bright Sun."

"The Gate of Dao race worships the sun and moon, which are the source of power. I am the God of Luminous Moon."

Su Ming remained silent. He looked at the two statues and did not speak for a long time.

"If you do not have any desires, then I will choose for you... I, God of Bright Sun, will bestow upon you... endless power!" The eyes of the Sun God statue shone, and the sun he held in his right hand shone with a brilliant light.

As that light spread out, Su Ming's body trembled, and a feeling of power erupted within him. His power increased exponentially with a bang at that moment, which was completely out of Su Ming's control.

He was already nearing the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm. As his power increased, he reached a breakthrough instantly and reached the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm.

"I can make you even stronger!"

As the Sun God's voice boomed, the power of Su Ming's clone which practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole experienced an increase in power once more. Loud, booming sounds echoed in his body, and as veins popped up on his skin, the powerful aura spreading out from him showed that he had broken through the middle stage of World Plane Realm and reached the later stage of World Plane Realm.

The feeling of power in the later stage of World Plane Realm felt incredibly real. He had a sense that it truly existed. At the instant his heart trembled, he looked at his palm, and a feeling that he could destroy the heavens with just one punch rose in him.

"You can become even stronger!"

As the Sun God's voice rang out again, Su Ming's body trembled furiously. An incredibly terrifying presence erupted from him. As that presence erupted forth, Su Ming could not help but roar towards the sky. The rocks on the mountain around him shattered, and he floated up in the air. During that moment, his physical power had reached the peak of the later stage of World Plane Realm.

"In fact... I can make you even stronger!"

The Sun God's flat voice echoed in the air again. With a bang, Su Ming attained completion of World Plane Realm from the peak of the later stage of World Plane Realm. With just one step, he could break through and head into a new Realm.

That was... Lunar Kalpa Realm!

"Do you... believe me?"

The Sun God's voice had a tone to it that could cause people's hearts to beat in excitement. As it spread out, Su Ming's power erupted with a bang once again. This time, his hair moved without wind, and his body trembled even more furiously. He could sense his blood boiling in this physical body of his.

As his blood boiled, wisps of blood smoke came out through his pores as his blood evaporated. They gathered above his head and turned into a bright moon.

At the instant this happened, Su Ming let out a long howl that shook the sky and earth. The sky trembled, and the mighty strength within him that was difficult to describe with words brought a with it a sense of the power of Lunar Kalpa Realm.

In fact, he even had a strong feeling that as long as he believed in the statue's words, his power would move to this Realm, and he would... become a powerful warrior in Lunar Kalpa Realm in one go.

"You can become even stronger."

The Sun God's voice was still as indifferent as ever. It was filled with a mighty pressure as it spread out, and Su Ming's cultivation base erupted once more. This time, the blood moon around him grew larger and gradually moved from a crescent to being a full moon. When it became a full circle, it was no longer a moon, but a sun!

This was Solar Kalpa!!

'This is impossible. If he truly had this power, then it would be impossible for the Yu Family to be in this state now. They would definitely have been able to conquer the entire Black Ink Planet!' Su Ming told himself that this was fake, but the feeling of the power in his body being real clearly showed him that all of this was real.

All cultivators had one deadly desire. There might be many different varieties to this desire, but in the end, they all came down to two things. One of them was eternal life, and the other was power.

Eternal life was what all manner of living desired, and powerful might was the dream of a cultivator.

When any single one of these two were placed before a cultivator, it was incredibly rare for anyone to be able to resist it. Su Ming had resisted the temptation of eternal life, but even though he knew that this was not real, in the face of his level of cultivation being risen... All of this was not something that he could truly not believe with just a simple declaration that he did not believe in it.

"The cultivation system used by the Yu Family is not suitable for me to help them raise their levels of cultivation. To them... I would not do so, but you are not the same... I can sense that your soul and everything about you... does not belong in this galaxy.

"You... belong to our region. You... belong to our land.

"Worship me, and I will make you strong! I can even make you... a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death."

As the Sun God's voice echoed in the air, Su Ming's cultivation base erupted once again. This time, the crimson sun above his head looked as if it had been lit in flames and turned into a red palm. This palm struck hard the top of Su Ming's skull.

With it, a loud bang shot up in his mind. He... sensed the presence of the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. It was a power that exceeded his imagination. It was... a maddening power that could stand up against the universe.

Su Ming lowered his head and looked at his palm. In his eyes, his palm had turned blood red, and he had a strong feeling that as long as he lifted his hand, he could destroy all lives.

"Worship me, and from then on, you will become the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!" The temptation lying in the Sun God's voice this time was even greater, and it echoed in Su Ming's mind nonstop.

Su Ming remained silent. After a long time, a cold sneer suddenly appeared at the corners of his lips. He lifted his head and looked at the statue of the Sun God.

"Is making me the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death your limit?"

At the instant Su Ming said these words, the statue of the Sun God at the ocean suddenly looked as if it had come alive. Powerful light shone in its eyes, and a bright light that could make the world disappear suddenly erupted from the bright sun in its right hand.

"You are not satisfied?"

"I can worship you, but the power of a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death... isn't enough for me to worship you," Su Ming said calmly. Perhaps becoming a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death was the desire of many cultivators, but this was far from enough to Su Ming.

With his experiences and knowledge, how could he worship this statue just to become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death!

The Sun God fell silent.

"Then what if I give you this as well," the statue of the moon that had not spoken for a long time said in her gentle voice.

As she spoke, a hazy illusion immediately appeared on the surface of the sea in front of Su Ming. Within it were all the people who had died in his memories.

All of these people had their eyes closed and did not move.

"Believe in me and worship me, and I will resurrect them."

Su Ming remained silent. After a long while, he shook his head.

"If I get sufficient power, I'll also be able to resurrect them. What you offer isn't enough to make me worship you."

Chapter 869: The Statue of the Sun God Shattered

"Then what is it that you want...?" The Sun God's voice might be sounding calm, but there was a slight difference to it.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, and a barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes before he spoke slowly. "Power that surpasses those that belong to the Masters of Fate, Lives, and Deaths."

"Very well." This time, the Sun God and Moon Goddess spoke at the same time. At the instant their voices echoed in the air, the sun and moon in their hands shone.

Su Ming's power erupted once more. He thought he could see the beginning of the universe, and an indescribable feeling rose in his heart.

It was as if he could control the rising and the setting of the sun, as if he had reached the Realm of the Rise and Fall of Fate.

Su Ming closed his eyes. At the moment he did so, within Western Ring Nebula, which was beyond Black Ink Planet, his Ecang clone sitting in the cosmos within the galaxy's foreign lands opened his eyes swiftly.

Ardor and desire appeared in his eyes.

'Three Gates of Heavenly Dao... So this is the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. They are formed by the sun and moon worshiped by the Gate of Dao race. They possess the power of Divine Essence in their bodies!

'But this Divine Essence does not come from the nine Great Divine Essences, but from the outer world... Their power comes from faith and worship. As long as someone believes in them, they will exist.

'Outsiders cannot hope to stand up against their power... but since I have Ecang's clone, I can overcome it!

'I have to make sure that the Divine Essence Illusory Art cast on my clone that practices the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole is even stronger. Only then... can I make my will descend into the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao without getting harmed!' As Su

Ming's Ecang clone lifted his hands, the galaxy where he was instantly turned into a big purple tree. As the tree swayed, a brilliant, purple light shone in Su Ming's eyes.

At the same time, as he continued closing his eyes in the world within the Second Gate of Heavenly Gate, his power rose once more, and he moved from the Rise and Fall of Fate to a new Realm.

That Realm was the Reincarnation of Life.

This Realm already surpassed Su Ming's understanding. He did not know what sort of power he possessed. However, he had a feeling that with one thought, he could make this place go through a cycle of life and death.

It was also at this moment that booming sounds rang out in Su Ming's body as the sun and moon shone together, and he could clearly feel that his level of cultivation had reached an even higher Realm.

This Realm gave Su Ming a strong feeling that... with just one thought, he could destroy the universe.

In fact, at this moment, as he looked at the piercing light from the sun and moon shining together, he found that the light had become much dimmer. He could even see that within the two statues, there were...

...two people sitting cross-legged!

They were a man and a woman. They were both sitting on the surface of the sea, and due to them sending out their power from their bodies, the statues were formed. The man had a handsome face, and the woman looked like a goddess. The two people's appearances were perfect, and not a single flaw could be found on them. However, this feeling of perfection made it seem like they only possessed human form and did not have souls.

Su Ming also sensed the presence of Divine Essence within their bodies!

"Divine Essence..." A powerful light shone in Su Ming's eyes. At that moment, the voices from the statues of the sun and moon echoed in his mind once more.

"That is enough. This is the limit of how high we can raise your level of cultivation. However, it is a mere illusion. If you believe in us and worship us from the bottom of your heart, then the power will solidify, and you... will become our apostle."

"With this sort of power, it will be enough for you to stand at the peak of the world outside, and it will also be enough for you to be able to do all the things that you could not do before. If you believe in us and worship us, then you will be able to obtain it."

"Believe in us and worship us, and you will obtain all of these. If you don't, then your power will be taken back..." As the two of them spoke, Su Ming's level of cultivation instantly started plunging down, as if the source that had been supporting him to become so strong was being taken away.

"The two of you are the ones who will worship me!" A cold sneer suddenly appeared on Su Ming's lips.

"You foolish ant, you overestimate yourself. Since you gave up on our good will, then... Hmm?"

The moment Su Ming spoke, the Sun God's majestic voice echoed in the air with a loud bang, but before he could finish speaking, his words froze for a moment, shock seeping into his voice.

What caused this shock was Su Ming swinging his arms outwards. The world behind him immediately distorted, and a gigantic purple tree appeared.

As that purple tree manifested in the air, a sinister and cold presence filled with madness and a domineering air erupted forth with a bang in all directions. As the presence burst forth, everything in the world was dyed in purple.

"Ecang!" When that purple tree appeared, two cries of surprise rang out at the same time from the two statues. Those voices were filled with shock and disbelief.

"Damn it, during the era when all lives died, Ecang was still recovering, why is it here?!"

By then, the power that had gathered on Su Ming's body dissipated like a receding tide. As it swiftly disappeared, Su Ming lifted his right hand and seized the air before him quickly.

"Come back!" As he spoke with a cold harrumph, the purple tree that occupied the world immediately started swaying. Countless branches started stretching ferociously outwards, turning into a huge hand in midair, and with a loud bang, it seized the statue of the Sun God.

The world rumbled, and a powerful light spread out from the statue of the Sun God. As it came into contact with the hand of Su Ming's Ecang clone, loud booms reverberated in the air, and the statue started showing signs of cracking.

At that moment, right before the eyes of the hundreds of people standing on Yu Family's square, which was located right beyond the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao... a huge crack appeared on the statue of the Sun God in the sky.

This was something that had never happened before. All the people who had challenged the second gate previously had never brought something like this about. While in shock, the crowd started buzzing with noise.

"What... what's going on? How could... How could the statue of the Sun God shatter?!"

"What's going on with the guest that is challenging the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao?! How did he make the statue of the Sun God shatter?!"

While everyone was in shock, the old man with crimson hair and the middle-aged man had drastic changes to their expressions. Even with their levels of cultivation, they were shocked by the sight, and disbelief appeared on their faces.

"The statue of the Sun God is shattering... This is something that had never happened before! Just what did this Su Ming do in the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao?!"

"I can sense anger... and fear from the shattering statue!" The middle-aged man beside him sucked in a sharp breath.

It was at that moment that a loud, booming sound rang out, and in the mid of the crowd's shock, the statue of the Sun God... shattered completely. As it did so, a purple aura spread out with a bang. The sinister air spreading out from that purple aura was filled with madness and a domineering will. Within an instant, it shook everyone's heart.

"Members of the Yu Family, move back!" an ancient voice spoke suddenly from beneath the ground that belonged to the Yu Family. Once it did so, a mighty power erupted from the ground and swept up all the members of the Yu Family backwards. Then, an old man with a hunched back emerged from within the ground.

At the moment he appeared, the old man with crimson hair and the middle-aged man, who were the only ones who were not pushed back, wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed towards the old man.

"Big brother!"

Chapter 870: The Era Where All Lives Died

The Statue of the Sun God shattered with a bang. This was something that had never happened before in Yu Family's history. Most of the members of the family and the guests were gentle in their actions as they challenged the gates, but this time... there was an incredibly unyielding and strong will contained by the challenger.

Booming sounds surged into the sky. An endless amount of shards was swept in all directions in the sky, as if the sky had shattered. With a powerful force, the shards

swept through the sky, and wherever they went, the weather would change. In fact, quite a large number of towers in the Yu Family shattered and collapsed as they came into contact with the shards that came towards them with loud booms.

These booms echoed in the air and shook the area within tens of thousands of li. For a moment, the members of the Yu Family were filled with apprehension. Some of those who had not arrived to the square yet sped up and rushed towards the place with their expressions changed drastically.

It looked as if a strong enemy had invaded the Yu Family, and a piercing screech even spread out within. Screens of light appeared out of thin air, and that was the sign that Yu Family's Great Protection Rune had been activated.

As an endless amount of figures charged towards the square, nearly ten thousand figures soon appeared around Dao Avenue Mountain. These were the members of the Yu Family that had stayed behind instead of venturing out to Divine Essence Star Ocean. If anyone cast their gaze towards them, they would find that there were quite a large number of people still rushing over to the place.

Yu Chen Hai stared blankly at the shattered statue of the Sun God in the sky. He seemed to have forgotten how to breathe, and his mind was completely blank. His expression was changing swiftly, and even he did not know what was in his mind at that moment.

His family members around him had shocked expressions on their faces. As more people arrived and Yu Chen Hai saw four people whose ages were similar to his and whose levels of cultivation were also the same as his appearing in the crowd from different directions, a chilling glare alighted in his eyes, and a dark expression appeared on his face.

These four people were four out of the five competitors in the auction. Only if he showed outstanding results against these people would he be valued highly by his family.

The appearance of these four people immediately made Yu Chen Hai's heart stable. His originally collapsing mind calmed down. He knew that no matter what, he had to stand by Su Ming's side. The more powerful Su Ming was, the more advantageous it would be for Yu Chen Hai. This was a chance given by heaven itself for him to rise in power in his family!

At the same time the statue of the Sun God in Yu Family's square shattered and the entire Yu Family was shaken, the gigantic hand that was formed by the purple Ecang tree behind Su Ming was lifted up from the collapsing statue of the Sun God in the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao.

He stood in midair, and his hair was moving without wind. A strange light shone in his eyes. Then, without pausing even in the slightest, he lifted his left hand and seized the air in the direction of the statue of the Moon Goddess.

"Shatter!"

Su Ming let out a cold shout, and immediately, the purple Ecang tree behind him started swaying intensely. The tree crown rocked slightly, and a violent gust of wind charged forward. At the instant Su Ming lifted his left hand, the endless branches grew longer as they twisted about. In the span of a breath, they turned into a gigantic hand that shot past Su Ming to seize the statue of the Moon Goddess.

The statue of the Sun God was still shattering, while the statue of the Moon Goddess was letting out a gentle light. However, while the light seemed gentle, if anyone looked at it for a long period of time, that light would cause them to lose their sight without their realization!

A low shout came from the statue of the Moon Goddess. As she lifted her head, the bright moon in her hand flew into the sky on its own to crash forcefully into the incoming Ecang hand.

Just that simple crash stirred up booming sounds that caused the ocean to roar, the seawater to raise one hundred thousand feet into the air, so its curtain would cover the surface of the ocean and the world within an instant.

As everything turned obscure, booming sounds surged into the sky. Su Ming's Ecang hand shuddered and was bounced thousands of feet away.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. As he let out a cold harrumph, the Ecang tree behind him roared. In the blink of an eye, the Ecang hand that was bounced off changed from the form of trying to seize something to the form of going to slap something!

At the same time, the hand of the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death appeared in Su Ming's left eye. With this epiphany, his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole might only be able to make the hand gain form, but if his Ecang clone executed it, the hand would possess mighty power.

Almost at the instant the shadow of the palm shone in Su Ming's left eye, the Ecang hand in the sky swiftly struck the statue of the Moon Goddess hidden behind the curtain of water.

"You are merely two Gods with incomplete souls, how dare you manipulate my level of cultivation? You... What right do you have to give me power? What right do you have to make me believe in you and worship you? Can you... pay the price of making me do those things?!"

Su Ming was in the air. As his voice echoed like thunder, his Ecang hand fell downwards with a bang. No one could tell if they saw from the distance whether Su Ming's Ecang hand had pushed down on the one hundred thousand feet curtain of water or had pushed down on the statue of the Moon Goddess hidden behind the curtain of water.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Loud booming sounds surged into the sky continuously as if they wanted to cause the world to collapse from the vibrations. Cracking sounds reverberated in the air. That was the sound of the statue of the Moon Goddess shattering. Under the power of Ecang, which now belonged to Su Ming, the Sun God and Moon Goddess, who were clearly incomplete, were no opponent!

Even if they might have been at the same level as Sui Chen Zi in the past... the life form that was Ecang was an existence that surpassed these two statues, and if they were to compare based on the levels of life forms, then Su Ming, who had Possessed Ecang, surpassed Ecang's existence.

He had nothing to be concerned about in this battle!

The Sun God and Moon Goddess who possessed Divine Essence from other worlds wanted to make Su Ming believe in them and worship them, wanted to turn him into their apostle that listened to their commands. Perhaps they had some other motives... but it was just as Su Ming had said, they could not pay the price of making him believe and worship them.

Since they could not pay the price and still attempted to do so, the only result of this could be... Su Ming snatching their Divine Essence and them become a way for him to become more powerful.

Booming sounds that were deafening to the ears rang in the air, and the breathing of the near ten thousand people from the Yu Family quickened, their eyes going wide as they stood near the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao. From there, they saw clearly that once the statue of the Sun God shattered, the statue of the Moon Goddess by its side also started cracking.

Huge cracks went down its side, and wisps of purple fog that brought with it a sinister intent as well as a ghastly presence spread out from within the cracks to occupy most of the sky.

The people found themselves staring at a purple sky when they lifted their heads to look at it.

The malicious feeling from the purple hue also left a deep impression within the hearts of those who saw it with their own eyes. Most of them suddenly found the purple color to be strange and bewitching.

Boom!

The statue of the Moon Goddess shattered. The cracks on her face made it seem as if they were tears. At the instant this scene shocked all of the people who saw it, the cracks continued expanding, and the statue of the Moon Goddess... shattered!

Of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, the second gate... the Sun and Moon Shine Together... disappeared from the face of the earth, removed from existence!

The three Grand Family Elders who were closest to Dao Avenue Mountain had differing expressions compared to the other members of their family. The old man who had appeared from the ground just now had an incredibly grim expression on his face, while the other two kept their gazes fixed on the spot where the statues once were.

"This purple hue... is making me want to tremble and worship it. I can even sense a power that seems to be able to destroy the universe from that purple hue..."

"Just... what level of cultivation does the person our kin has brought back possess?!"

The three of them looked at each other, and they could see the shock in the eyes of one another.

Once the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess shattered completely, the one hundred thousand feet curtain of water gradually fell down within the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao. The booming sounds were then reduced to lingering echoes.

Su Ming stood in midair with a calm expression. Before him, the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess had already collapsed into the sea. As the shards from their bodies scattered everywhere, the indescribably handsome man and the flawlessly beautiful woman appeared from within the collapsed statues.

The two of them stood on the surface of the sea and glared at Su Ming with endless hatred on their faces.

"During the era when all lives died, we were all recovering... This is where all of our Divine Clones lie. You went against the promises we made in the past, and you will receive the punishment of the Spirit King!"

"Get out of here! Divine Essence Star Ocean is not a place where those of you from the nine Great Universes can come. The pact of the Spirit King is still around, and if you devour our Divine Essences, the Spirit King's will is going to descend in this place, and you... will die for sure!"

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as usual, but his heart was shaken slightly. Once he Possessed Ecang and turned it into his clone, he had obtained its jumbled memories, and time was needed for him to slowly fuse with those memories. Right then, there were plenty of things that he did not know of, such as the Spirit King and the promise they spoke of. He had absolutely no memory of it.

"You don't know Spirit King's pact?"

"You... Could it be that you're a cultivator? You... You Possessed Ecang!" With some unknown method, the man and woman had managed to read Su Ming's mind, and at that moment, their expressions changed drastically.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph and did not speak. These two people's bodies were formed completely by Divine Essence. Su Ming could sense a strong desire from his Ecang clone. If he could devour these two people, then his Ecang clone would become much stronger.

Su Ming did not know what that Spirit King's pact was, and neither would he be bothered by it. Almost the instant the two people's expressions changed, the Ecang tree behind Su Ming shook with a bang, and as it grew endlessly larger, it replaced the entire world. A gap was revealed on the Ecang tree's trunk, and it looked like a gigantic mouth. It sucked in a sharp breath in the direction of the two people in the sea.

With it, the sky, earth, and naturally the sea as well, instantly shrank to be sucked into Ecang's mouth all at once. Despair showed up on the man and woman's faces in the mid of their anguish. They could not hope to fight back. Without their statues, they were just a bundle of Divine Essence.

The world turned purple in an instant. After a moment, everything vanished, and even the tree that was formed by Su Ming's Ecang clone disappeared without a trace.

Two bundles of Divine Essence appeared before Su Ming's Ecang clone in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. One of them was in the shape of a moon, and the other in the shape of the sun. They surrounded the Ecang clone, and as they slowly shrank, Su Ming's Ecang clone lifted his head and roared before swiftly becoming stronger.

At the same time, Su Ming's clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole let out a roar towards the sky in the broken world. He might already be near the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm, but at that moment, as he roared, his level of cultivation showed clear signs of rising.

"Clone that practices the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole, execute the Art and bring forth the sixth disaster!"

Chapter 871: The Later Stage of World Plane Realm

The aura from Su Ming's clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole erupted forth. However, as it did so, Su Ming realized that his level of cultivation was kept within the limits of nearing the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm no matter how much his power increased, and he could not break through that level.

'The clone that practices this Art is imperfect, that's why my level of cultivation won't increase... If I want to make it complete, then I must fuse with something!' Su Ming lifted his head. With a glint in his eyes, he took a step forward.

With that one step, the broken world around him distorted and instantly started disintegrating. He saw Black Ink Planet's sky and earth before him... and he also saw the near ten thousand members of the Yu Family, along with the three cultivators with great levels of cultivation standing at the foot of Dao Avenue Mountain.

Almost at the instant Su Ming walked out from the shattered statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess, the gazes of the near ten thousand people immediately gathered on him. There was shock, astonishment, and also complicated feelings contained within those gazes.

The buzz of discussions rose up among the people, and all of it... was because of Su Ming!

"Is that him?!"

"He's the one that cleared the first gate in Dao Avenue Mountain, and during the Second Gate: the Sun and Moon Shine Together, he made the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess shatter!"

"Who brought this person here? There's no way a normal member of the family could get in contact with such a powerful warrior. Could it be that the family elders asked him here?"

"Could he... Could he be considered to have cleared the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao? Would... the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao appear?!"

The noise from the commotion rose and fell. The Eldest Family Elder who had the highest status among the three family elders in the Yu Family wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming. Just as he was about to speak, his expression suddenly changed and he rapidly moved back.

Almost at the instant he moved back, Su Ming spread out his arms in midair. He had no time to deal with other people at that moment. Once he devoured the Sun God and Moon Goddess, his Ecang clone was swiftly digesting the Divine Essence and becoming stronger. At the same time, the Divine Essence which was controlled by Su Ming's soul also became stronger.

In this situation, his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole would also become stronger. However, he was still kept at the state where he was near the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm. If he wanted to break through that level, he would need to mend the flaws in this clone of his.

Su Ming's eyes shone. He lifted his right hand and pointed at the ground, and the shards that came from the statue of the Sun God shuddered and tumbled in all directions. Then, with sharp piercing whistles, they went towards Su Ming.

These shards were disintegrating swiftly in midair, turning into thin threads that looked like flesh that charged into Su Ming's right hand. Once they fused with him, they filled his entire body.

The fusion happened too quickly, and within an instant, Su Ming was enveloped in those threads. From the distance, he looked like a gigantic cocoon. Soon after the cocoon was formed, the shards from the shattered statue of the Moon Goddess charged towards him from the area as well. They enveloped him within an instant, causing Su Ming to look as if he was covered in a grave!

Su Ming had activated the Earthen Script Art on himself. With the unique characteristic of the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole, he devoured the quintessence of the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess in an attempt to mend his clone somewhat.

This was the only method Su Ming could think of at that moment. There was no other way for him to make this clone of his become complete within a short period of time besides this method, and if he missed it, he would have let this opportunity to grow stronger disappear.

A grave that was several thousands of feet tall floated in midair. It looked like a statue and was shining with sudden flashes of bright and dim light. There were also a large number of runic symbols around the statue, which gave it a bizarre feeling.

This scene astounded all the members of the Yu Family in the area. Even the pupils of the three family elders had shrank at the sight.

"He's..."

"He's absorbing the quintessence of the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess to mend the flaws in his Life!"

"This is... This..."

The expressions of the three people turned dark. The statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess belonged to the Yu Family, and now, they could only watch as they were absorbed. The three elders could not help but be slightly displeased by it.

However, the sinister and majestic mighty pressure spreading out from the grave at that moment made the three of them slightly hesitant. Just as they did not know what they were supposed to do, a sigh echoed through the entire Yu Family and caused the world to tremble.

"Let him absorb it." As the voice spoke, a figure walked towards them from the distance. That figure was obscure in the beginning, but as the person walked over, it gradually became clear. The person was a woman.

There was a veil over the woman's face, and her features could not be seen clearly. However, there was a wave of ripples that could not be described with words spreading out from her body to the entire area.

As the woman walked over, the members of the Yu Family were mostly stunned. Only the expressions of a few of them had changed immediately when they saw this woman. At the same time shock appeared on their faces, they immediately knelt down while trembling.

"Progenitor!" The three family elders shuddered when they saw the woman and knelt down to worship her together. Their expressions were filled with reverence, along with a form of fanaticism.

As the three people knelt down and her title rang in the air, the members of the Yu Family in the area who were still perplexed swiftly remembered the portrait of a woman among the few other portraits they saw when they were offering sacrifices to their ancestors.

"Greetings, Progenitor!" As they remembered her identity, all the members of the Yu Family knelt down to worship her.

This woman was the only person who had cleared the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao in the Yu Family - their Progenitor! She might not be the oldest among them, but was the strongest in the Yu Family over the course of countless years. Even the founder of the Yu Family could not compare to this woman in terms of level of cultivation.

She stood there quietly, her head lifted to look at the grave in the sky, without saying a single word. Her silence made it seem as if the air around them had been frozen up, so all the people kneeling down did not dare to say a single word.

Time passed. In the blink of an eye, two hours went by.

At that time, cracking sounds suddenly came out from the grave that encased Su Ming. Those sounds swiftly became stronger, and after a moment, they practically connected into one unending noise. In the end, a loud bang shot up into the air, and most of the grave shattered.

No shards resulted from the parts that shattered. It was as if they had turned into ashes and had disappeared on their own.

At the same time, a muffled sound came from the grave.

"The sixth disaster!"

At the instant that voice spoke, the world rumbled, wind and clouds were swept to the side, and a red lotus appeared in the sky in the form of an illusion.

The lotus blossomed, and as it bloomed, its petals fell off one by one. When the first petal fell, the grave in which Su Ming was shuddered.

The second petal, the third... they continued to fall one by one. The grave in which Su Ming was located shuddered even more furiously, and a low growl that seemed to have emitted by someone who was enduring tremendous pain faintly came from inside.

When the final petal fell off, a booming sound rang out from the grave in which Su Ming was. A right hand stretched out. It looked normal, but if anyone took a closer look, they would have the misconception that no one in the world could destroy it.

At the instant the right hand extended out of the grave, a power that surpassed the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm and... belonged to the later stage of World Plane Realm erupted with a bang.

At the instant the presence of the later stage of World Plane Realm spread out, the lotus in the sky disappeared.

Su Ming had overcome the sixth disaster in the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole!

"The seventh disaster!"

When Su Ming's voice came from the grave once again, the grave shattered once more. This time, its destruction reached its full extent. As layers upon layers of the grave disintegrated, Su Ming's body was revealed before the people.

The grave was no longer around him, and neither were there any shards that belonged to the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess. He did not seem any different, but only Su Ming himself knew that the flaws of this clone of his were mended due to the quintessence from the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess, though he was still not perfect.

Still, this was enough proof to show that this method to make his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole was feasible!

The sky trembled. The presence of Su Ming's power erupted from his body, making it seem as if he was about to become even stronger. However... almost at the instant this presence appeared, it disappeared the next moment.

Su Ming had experienced this feeling before. He knew that this was due to the flaws within this clone of his. Absorbing the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess had only mended some of the flaws, which allowed the Qi in his clone to break through the middle stage of World Plane Realm and reach the later stage of World Plane Realm. However, once he reached this level, he could no longer go any further.

Su Ming opened his eyes. At the instant he did so, the sun, moon, and stars in his eyes shone with an incredibly brilliant light.

"Greetings, Lord Apostle."

When Su Ming opened his eyes, all the people were kneeling down on the ground except for one woman. This woman, who was the only standing in the area, looked at Su Ming before she bent her body slightly. Her voice did not echo in the air, but appeared straight in Su Ming's mind.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. At the instant he looked towards the woman, he was suddenly stunned. The woman... was incredibly similar to the beautiful woman he saw within the statue of the Moon Goddess!!

They might not be completely the same, but the incredible similarity meant that the woman possessed unparalleled beauty. Su Ming could also sense the gentle power from the Moon Goddess coming from her body.

In fact, when he looked towards the woman, he had a strong feeling that... he could control her life and mind. If he wanted her dead, then she would immediately sacrifice her life without any hesitation.

"I am Sacred Lady Yu Rou of the Moon Goddess' lineage. Greetings, Lord Apostle. My Lord, you have the presence of the divine bodies that belong to the Moon Goddess and the Sun God in you. It is also not just the presence of the statues, but also the vibes from their Divine Essence.

"The line of the Moon Goddess found the family's sacred item of the Gods before the recording of history. Over the years, we have tried to have others inherit the power of the Gods, and after so many years of waiting... you have arrived among us," the woman said softly, and only Su Ming could hear her words.

A barely noticeable glint appeared in his eyes. Those not involved might not know that he had devoured the Sun God and Moon Goddess, and it was logical that the woman had mistaken what had happened. After all... he had indeed used his Ecang clone to devour the Sun God and Moon Goddess' Divine Essence.

As for those so called divine bodies of the statues, Su Ming had indeed absorbed them, thought it was to make this clone of his more complete.

It was apt for him to be known as the apostle of the Sun God and Moon Goddess. In fact, it was even apt for him to be known as the Sun and Moon God.

"Lord Apostle, please retrieve the Divine Vessel from the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao. I will offer up the power of Yin Essence to help you obtain the final legacy from the Gods... in order to complete my family's mission."

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 872: Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 872: Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here

Chapter 872: Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. The woman's appearance and her words were rather mystifying, but after focusing his mind on the matter and falling into pensive silence, he could discover some clues.

The Yu Family to which the woman belonged to in the ancient past was clearly not cultivators at that time, but were... members of an alien race!

This race might have been known as the Gate of Dao race, but might have also been a branch of the Gate of Dao.

The Gate of Dao worshiped the Gods of the Sun and Moon. In an age that once existed, perhaps they had reached an age of glory as well, but as the era when all lives died, which the Gods of the Sun and Moon spoke of, came about, the Gate of Dao gradually fell to ruin.

The members of the race left their homeland and arrived in Black Ink Planet. From then on, the Yu Family appeared.

The Yu Family's ancestors had never forgotten the Gods they worshiped, that was why they had returned to Divine Essence Star Ocean numerous times, and in the end, brought back the Enchanted Vessel that belonged to the Gate of Dao.

It was the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao.

They brought it back, and perhaps they had also communicated with the Gods of the Sun and Moon who had woken up from their slumber. That was why all members of the Yu Family were required to challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. It could be that

even this was not enough, and so in an attempt to cover up something, they also had guests join in the challenge.

They longed for their family members to clear the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao and obtain the legacy from the Gods, and from there... become the Apostle.

Su Ming's arrival had caused him to be mistaken as an Apostle due to this coincidence. That was why Yu Rou had spoken to him previously.

'The Shamans are in Black Ink Planet, and so I've suspected that there are members of alien races who have disguised themselves to be here. Now that I look at it, this guess had been correct.' As he was deep in thought, Su Ming did not speak.

However, at the instant the woman finished speaking, the members of the Yu Family in the area closed their eyes and fell to the ground slowly. In fact, even the three family elders fell into deep sleep.

Only Su Ming and the woman remained. One of them stood calmly in the sky, while the other stood respectfully on the ground.

At the same time, as the members of Yu Family fell asleep, distortions appeared at the spot where the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess shattered. As booms echoed in the air... the final gate of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao appeared.

It was... a cream-colored mountain rock!

The size of the mountain rock surpassed the size of the statues that belonged to the Sun God and Moon Goddess, and an elephant was carved on that mountain rock!

The elephant had its nose wrapped around a scale... At the instant this strange carving appeared, a mighty pressure spread out from it, and it was so strong that Su Ming's heart trembled.

The mighty pressure filled the entire area, and if it was not because the Rune of the Yu Family had been activated and the Yu Family had been waiting for the Apostle to appear, hence had been ready for this since a long time ago, then this mighty pressure and presence would have spread through the entire Black Ink Planet during that moment.

"The third gate of the Three Gates of Heavenly Gate... Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here. By all means, Lord Apostle." As the woman from the Yu Family spoke softly, she bent her body slightly to bow to Su Ming.

He looked at the gigantic mountain rock, then at the image of the third gate on its side - Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here. He might have seemed calm at that moment, but his heart was trembling. He could sense... that this was an Enchanted Vessel!

This was an Enchanted Treasure that contained an endless amount of power, and in fact could only be activated by the power of Divine Essence - a Divine Essence Enchanted Treasure!

While looking at the third gate, Su Ming suddenly asked, "Who brought the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao from Divine Essence Star Ocean to Black Ink Planet?"

Yu Rou was momentarily stunned before she answered him softly, "The fourth Progenitor of the family. He obtained the Enchanted Vessel tens of thousands of years ago. This matter is a secret within the family, and most normal family members do not know the details of this."

"What is the name of your fourth Progenitor? Is he still around?" A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. His voice was normal, so others would not be able to tell why he would suddenly ask this question.

"The fourth Progenitor's name is Yu Han. He used up all his life to activate the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao in the past. Once he brought the Enchanted Vessel back to the family, he left a will, then his form and spirit were destroyed, and he died." Yu Rou's voice was as gentle as a piece of jade, just like her name suggested.

"I once heard someone mention that someone from the Yu Family cleared the third gate. Was it you?" Su Ming averted his gaze away from the third gate and looked towards Yu Rou.

"It is indeed me. It was also at that time that I became the Sacred Lady of the Moon Goddess' lineage. I obtained Divine Essence and awakened to my mission, but I was restricted in my movements and could not leave the Yu Family. My body cannot bear sunlight, so now, what stands before you is just a shadow... Only by completing my mission will I be able to walk out of the Yu Family," Yu Rou said softly.

"Lord Apostle, please enter the third gate and obtain Enchanted Vessel: Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here. The Yu Family will look upon you as our God and from then on worship you."

"You want me to enter the third gate as soon as possible?" Su Ming smiled faintly, then cast the woman a profound look.

When he looked towards her, his eyes shone brightly.

The woman's expression remained the same and not a hint of change could be detected on her. She lifted her head and looked into Su Ming's eyes before she spoke to him softly.

"This is my mission."

Su Ming continued to smile faintly. Once he turned around, he took a step towards the Enchanted Vessel and instantly appeared before that gigantic mountain rock. With a flash, he disappeared inside it without a trace.

Yu Rou looked at Su Ming disappearing, but even when he was gone, her expression remained the same and did not change. It was as if emotions could not be detected on her.

She stood there quietly and did not move, as if she was waiting for Su Ming's return.

Once every one hundred feet under the ground where she stood was a layer of fine, golden sand. They formed layers upon layers of obstruction, and these layers continued for one hundred thousand feet under Yu Rou's feet until... a gigantic underground palace could be found.

"With the Spiritual Sand acting as an obstruction, even a God's divine thought will not be able to penetrate through. After all, this Spiritual Sand is a relic of the ancient past. As long as we believe that it can prevent all forms of investigation, then it will be able to do so." An old voice that sounded as if teeth were grinding against each other gradually echoed in the darkness within the underground palace.

Once that voice spoke, green candle flames suddenly lit up in the underground palace. As the place illuminated by the green light, it looked very eerie. As the candle flames swayed, it looked as if there was a sinister gust of wind made by a malicious spirit roaming about in the underground palace.

"We've waited for tens of thousands of years, and the day has finally arrived..."

"It's a pity that this person isn't from the Yu Family, or else... we wouldn't have to be so cautious."

"Yu Rou is a pragmatic person. She won't let anyone discover any clues, and even we cannot be certain whether she leans more towards the family... or the Gods."

Voices that were similarly as old as the first echoed in the underground palace. As the green candles were lit up and as most of the palace was revealed, it could be vaguely seen that there were thirteen old men sitting cross-legged in there.

Each of the thirteen old men was older than the last. A decaying presence was spreading out from their bodies, and they looked as if they were dead. In fact, there was a faint green light shining from their eyes under the candle flames, and they looked incredibly horrifying.

Their skin was dry and shriveled, and their flesh had withered, making it look as if they were only skin and bones. However, with the light from the candle flames, it could be vaguely seen that there were plenty of complicated pictures drawn on their bodies.

"Even if she leans more towards the side of the Gods, she is still a member of the Yu Family. All the pros and cons will tell her that she only has one choice..."

"We've waited for tens of thousands of years, and the day has finally arrived. The Apostle has truly appeared, and it's not a waste that we have been suffering for so many years in this place. We did not dare be exposed under the sun, and did not dare walk out of the underground palace..."

"We hid the secret of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, and not even our family members know about this. In truth, over the course of tens of thousands of years, Yu Rou was not the only one who cleared the third gate... Including us, there were fourteen people who cleared the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao."

"All of it was worth it. As long... as the Progenitor's plan is successful and as long as the Progenitor can Possess the Apostle to become God, then... from then on, our branch of the Gate of Dao will only believe in ourselves and worship our own people!"

"The Yu Family will rise to power, as long as the Progenitor's plan is successful!"

"We shouldn't fail. We've prepared for so many years, and the thirteen of us have even given up everything to help the fourth Progenitor, Yu Han. In fact... we've already destroyed the Life Souls of the third, second, and even the first Progenitor. All of these... if we still don't succeed..."

"We'll definitely succeed!"

"That's right. We'll definitely succeed. The fourth Progenitor accidentally fused with the third gate in the past. Over tens of thousands of years that we have offered help, we've suppressed the Vessel Spirit that had originally fallen asleep and turned it into a new Vessel Spirit.

"What the Progenitor needs is just Possession. We've prepared for this for tens of thousands of years to Possess the Apostle!"

"Hmph, Apostle, my foot. It's just a body formed by the wills of the spirits of the sun and moon gathering on that person. The others don't know the truth, but we've known since a long time ago that the moment we chose to worship them, we would lose all forms of intelligence the moment we become Apostles."

"As long as you believe it, it will exist... Such a mighty power. This is the source of the spirits of the sun and moon's Divine Essence. We must have control over this power. The Gods have already died, and the Path of Immortals have already faded away. This is... an era when all lives will rise to power!"

As the thirteen old men in the underground palace spoke with excitement and anticipation, Yu Rou stood calmly on the ground above. Her face remained indifferent,

as if she was not concerned with any of these... but also as if she did not know what could possibly cause her emotions to change.

Above her, within the third gate in the sky, within Peace Arrives when the Elephant is Here, a majestic sea of clouds appeared before Su Ming's eyes.

This sea was boundless. It covered the entire region. When he looked over, he could see that there seemed to be an elephant crying out in the clouds in the far distance.

The sound of the elephant's trumpets was echoing faintly. As it shook his heart, the Divine Essence in his soul boiled because of it.

"Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here..." Su Ming took a step forward and moved swiftly through the sea of clouds.

'The Yu Family might seem normal, and while I can't find any clues from that Yu Rou, not even from her words... all of this is just too smooth.' Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. While remaining wary, he gradually approached the trumpeting elephant.

1. Peace arrives when the elephant is here, 太平有象: It is a traditional pattern that means luck. The meaning of the whole thing means that "when the world is at peace, crops will grow well". 太平 means that the world is at peace, and 有象 is "there are elephants". The whole thing is "Elephants are the signs showing the world is at peace". Since elephants live for a long period of time, they were seen as auspicious creatures.

Chapter 873: Promise

Fortune comes from risks.

Su Ming had originally come to the Yu Family with the intention of gaining a foothold in Black Ink Planet and blending into its crowd at an even faster pace so that he could investigate the things related to the bald crane.

In fact, if he had the chance, he even wanted to go to Divine Essence Star Ocean so that he could take a look at what sort of universe was contained within the place that was known as the Star Ocean within the Land of Divine Essence, and just how many of the alien races he had never seen before.

Then, he would wait for a chance. Once his Ecang clone became stronger, he would search for a way to leave the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and rush into the region where the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds are stationed and return to the four Great True Worlds. Then... he would go back home.

However, this plan had changed slightly after Su Ming sensed the Shamans' presence when he stood outside Yu Family's Relocation Rune. He had discovered the existence of the Shamans, and this caused him to come up with a myriad of interconnected thoughts, and he had also thought about Lie Shan Xiu.

In fact, in the depths of his heart, Su Ming had another hope. He hoped... to see Berserkers here.

After all, if the Shamans could be here, then there was no reason for the Berserkers to not be here!

That was why Su Ming had chosen to help Yu Chen Hai and challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao.

He had not needed to challenge the gates in such a flashy manner and he had not intended to do anything in a high profile, but after going through the things in the First Gate of Heavenly Dao, he had sensed a power that tempted him. As long as he believed in it, it would exist.

That was why Su Ming had not hesitated stepping in when the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao appeared. Within it, he had received a great serendipity with his Ecang clone, but even so, he had not received the power that had tempted him just then.

However, it was already enough!

If the woman had not appeared and he had not detected the presence of an Enchanted Treasure within the third gate, he would not have challenged it. However, an Enchanted Treasure that could only be activated by Divine Essence and could stir up Divine Essence had tempted Su Ming into making such a choice.

That was why he challenged the third gate, having decided to take the risk!

Even if he suspected that the Yu Family had an ulterior motive, he believed that his act of devouring the Sun God and Moon Goddess had not been seen through by anyone. He had the Ecang clone with him, and with it, his chances of success became greater in this gamble.

As Su Ming approached the elephant, the elephant's cries in the sea of clouds became incredibly clear. A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He moved forward and instantly shot through the sea of clouds. At the moment he closed in, he saw the elephant.

It was... a gigantic elephant that was covered in fur which was purplish black and was tens of thousands of feet tall. Its limbs were bound by the clouds, and it was swaying its nose continuously in agony. Its cries spread out in all directions, because of which the clouds kept tumbling about.

Its eyes were murky, and it had huge tusks. A ferocious intent spread out from the elephant. As it roared, the tusks looked to possess a power that could destroy the world, and fear would raise within anyone who felt it.

There was a gigantic round bowl under its body. That bowl was also several tens of thousands of feet wide, and it had the elephant completely contained within. Su Ming immediately saw that there were four chains that extended upwards from around the bowl, and only when they were nearly ten thousand feet above the bowl did Su Ming see a black staff!

It... was a scale!

The bowl was part of a hanging scale, and the black staff was the beam. It stretched out endlessly, and it was clear that there should be a weight somewhere in the distance, above the beam that could weigh this elephant.

Su Ming's heart trembled at this scene. He was unable to distinguish whether the elephant or the scale was the Enchanted Treasure. There was even a possibility... that both of them were the Enchanted Treasure!

'This is the Enchanted Vessel that belonged to the Sun God and Moon Goddess when they were at the peak of their power. If that's the case, then it's accurate to say that there are two treasures!'

A focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He did not immediately take action, since that would just be reckless, but instead leaped up and charged along the beam.

However, even when he saw the end of the beam, he did not find the weight of the scale. This was... a scale that did not have a weight!

"No promise..." At the moment Su Ming realized that there was no weight, a cry that seemed to be emitted due to pain suddenly rang through the world with loud, booming sounds.

"No promise... Where is the promise... Where are your promises?!"

"I swallowed the weight, because... I swallowed the promise!"

"Do not believe in the promise! The promise is the source of my strength! Believe in me, and I will exist!"

"I... am the Enchanted Vessel, Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here. I... do not have a promise!"

"I want to weigh a promise and find out how heavy it is. I want to know... how heavy a promise is. I want to know... just what is a promise!"

There was endless suffering contained in that voice. It sounded like roars as it echoed in the air. When Su Ming's heart trembled, that voice suddenly became gentle.

"You... came..."

"You inherited the Divine Essence that belonged to the Sun God and Moon Goddess. You... brought the promise here..."

"Give me a promise... I will follow you... and find out how much a promise weighs!"

"Give me... a promise..."

"What promise do you want?!" Su Ming sucked in a deep breath. When he spoke, he had already noticed that the one who spoke was the elephant in the distance. It was the one speaking while crying out.

However, its eyes were murky, as if it was deep in sleep. It was like the words that were echoing in the air came from its soul.

"Promise me... that you will take me away!"

"Make this promise with me, and I will become... your strongest supreme treasure. I will use this body of mine to stomp over all galaxies... Give me... a promise!" that voice roared. This time, it was no longer in pain, but instead had a form of madness contained within it.

In the mid of this madness, the sea of clouds roared and swept out in all directions, causing the endless sea to swiftly rotate before turning into a gigantic vortex. Loud, booming sounds spread out, and as the sea of clouds tumbled about before spreading out nonstop, the center of the world no longer have any clouds. Because of this, Su Ming could finally see the entirety of this Enchanted Vessel with just one glance.

Su Ming did not speak. He looked at the Enchanted Vessel known as Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, looked into the elephant's eyes, and a freezing glare gradually appeared in his eyes.

'As long you believe in it, it will exist...'

Su Ming's lips slowly curled up into a cold sneer. The Abyss Builders' inborn ability was Possession, and he had even performed it twice. As he looked at the elephant's murky eyes at that moment, he could tell it was clearly deep in sleep, which could only mean that the voice's appearance... There might seem to be no temptation in this place, but in truth, it was waiting for Su Ming to make a promise. If he believed in those words, then whoever said those words would come into existence.

It might seem abstruse and insubstantial, but in truth, this was the source of this power.

'Are you intending to Possess me...? Then I'll play with you!' Su Ming chuckled coldly. At the instant a freezing glare appeared in his eyes, he opened his mouth slowly and said, "I promise to take you away!"

At the instant he said them, a crazed bout of laughter cut off the elephant's voice. There was an ancient air contained within that laughter, along with extreme joy as well as a craziness that came from finally being set free after being oppressed for tens of thousands of years.

"I... will fulfill your promise!"

At the instant the laughter shook the sky and earth, a great will suddenly erupted from within the Enchanted Vessel known as Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here. The strength of that will caused the world to tremble, and in an instant, it charged towards Su Ming to Possess him!

Chapter 874: A Mere Firefly's Light!

"Possession?" Su Ming stood at where he was and did not take even a step back. He had long since guessed most of what was going on. When he saw the Vessel Spirit from the Enchanted Vessel known as Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, a glint appeared in his eyes. He even took a step forward, as if he was willingly offering himself up to be Possessed.

The great will closed in on him instantly. Yet when he saw that Su Ming had not retreated but had instead moved forward, he became uncertain. However, the chance now was one that had arrived after he waited for tens of thousands of years. There was no way he would give it up due to a moment of uncertainty.

As the will came upon him with loud booming sounds, it descended on Su Ming's body. That will was like flowing streams of water that surged into his body through his pores. A crazed laughter also echoed in Su Ming's mind.

"It's your serendipity to become my body. Since you promised to take me away, then you... will belong to me!"

A booming sound rang out in Su Ming's mind, but his expression remained calm. It was as if he was completely unconcerned about being Possessed. As the booming sounds reverberated violently in his mind, he sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes.

"The Abyss Builders' inborn ability allows us to Possess others to live. You are just a Vessel Spirit in an Enchanted Vessel, and there is even a possibility that you aren't the real soul, but a soul fragment that had accidentally fuses with the Enchanted Vessel. How dare... you Possess me?"

At the instant Su Ming closed his eyes, his thoughts burst forth in his mind and soul with a loud sound that was like thunderous boom that could shake the sky and earth.

Once the great will surged into Su Ming's body, the elephant's eyes slowly became clearer and it fell into deep sleep. The light on its body became dark. Even the scale lost its lustre. Then, this world formed by the sea of clouds became dead silent.

There was no tumbling of waves, no movement of clouds. Everything seemed to have been frozen.

However, compared to the tranquility of the world, a storm was now raging in Su Ming's mind, and booming sounds as loud as those when mountains collapse reverberated in him.

Su Ming's mind was like a purple galaxy that was as boundless as the universe. At that moment, within the purple galaxy was a layer of gray fog that covered an area of some several tens of thousands of feet. This might not seem big, but if anyone looked at it from a close proximity, they would be greatly shocked.

As that gray fog tumbled about, a contour of an old face emerged. The expression on that face was twisted, with an extreme joy as well as a madness born due to being oppressed for tens of thousands of years. Now, that face was spreading out endlessly to devour the place.

"Haha! I've waited for tens of thousands of years! Tens of thousands of years! And the Apostle has finally arrived! I'll Possess you and treat your body well, and I will let you have a taste... of the pain of losing your body!"

The gray fog laughed madly in the purple galaxy as it continued spreading to cover the entire area. In the blink of an eye, it had already grown ten times larger than its original size.

If anyone looked at it then, they would find that the gray fog had become even greater in mass, and would be slightly terrified.

"Haha... Playing hide and seek with me, hmm? Very well, then. I will find your soul. Your mind might be big, but you can't escape... I will search for your soul slowly and devour you. What I have is time!" Madness appeared on the old man's face in the gray fog. It spread out once more, tumbling into the distance.

Time trickled by slowly. The gray fog continued expanding through the galaxy, but Su Ming's soul could not be found. The old man that was the gray fog looked at the boundless purple galaxy, and his expression slowly turned dark.

"I'd like to see where you can run to!"

He looked as if he had sucked in a deep breath before he let out a quick breath. When he did so, the gray fog immediately grew in size exponentially before tumbling outwards into the endless area. In the blink of an eye, the gray fog occupied most of the galaxy.

If someone looked over, they would find that this galaxy was filled with the old man's gray fog. When he sucked in another deep breath, all parts of the purple galaxy turned gray with a bang. The place was completely filled with the gray fog.

The purple galaxy which was Su Ming's mind no longer seemed like it belonged to him but to the old man. The old man laughed madly, but then he came to an abrupt halt, and his expression turned dark once again, because he, who thought that he had occupied Su Ming's mind... found that he could not find Su Ming's soul.

"Damn it! Brat, you sure can hide yourself well, but I'll still be able to find you!"

The old man let out a low growl. No one could say what sort of divine ability he executed, but the gray fog immediately exploded with a bang before turning into an endless amount of gray threads. As if they wanted to break apart this galaxy, they moved outwards with loud, booming sounds.

Time continued passing. Several hours later, the old man's crazed voice echoed in Su Ming's mind.

"Just where are you?! I've already occupied your entire mind, so why can't I find your soul?! That's impossible! Your soul has to be hidden here!"

"Even if you don't come out, even if you hide for tens of thousands of years, it's still useless! I'll go and control your body right now, and if you dare to come out and interfere with me, I'll immediately devour you!"

The old man roared, but soon, his expression changed, because he realized... that he could not leave this place, much less control Su Ming's body.

"This is... What's going on?! How can this be?!"

The old man's expression changed drastically. Unwilling to accept this, he tried once again to leave the galaxy that was Su Ming's mind and control Su Ming's body, but after multiple tries, he discovered to his shock... that he still could not do so.

Based on what he knew, this was something that should be impossible. He could not think of any reason. As he roared, he looked as if he had gone crazy. Fog tumbled about, as if it wanted to cause Su Ming's mind to burst like a balloon.

"Damn it! I'll find your soul... I have ample time, just you wait. Once I find your soul, I'll make you know just what pain is!"

As he was raving, a calm voice suddenly traveled out indifferently from all directions.

"You want to see my soul?"

"Come here!" When the old man heard that voice, he immediately roared. This roar came from the gray fog, and it was as if the galaxy he had occupied was roaring.

"As you wish."

When Su Ming's cool voice traveled into the galaxy calmly... a galaxy that was the same size as the one occupied by the old man's gray fog suddenly appeared beyond the one that was occupied. Then, another one, and another one, and another one appeared... until an endless amount of boundless galaxies were in all directions.

There was a total of one hundred thousand galaxies!

The old man had only occupied one out of one hundred thousand galaxies!

Su Ming's soul actually formed a complete universe!

This scene completely stunned the old man, and a dazed look appeared on his face for an instant. This surpassed his imagination. He had never imagined that a person's mind could be so terrifying.

A shudder ran through the old man's mind, and he gritted his teeth and roared, "Where are you?!"

"I am right before you. Lift up your head, and you will see me." The thing that answered the old man was a loud boom formed by all one hundred thousand galaxies speaking at the same time.

The old man instinctively lifted his head, and he started trembling furiously. He saw...

Chapter 875: We Welcome the Progenitor's Egression!

He saw a mysterious object of an indescribable size within the boundless cosmos. It was difficult for him to compare what he saw with anything else.

It seemed like a gigantic pillar, but the breadth of it seemed to have replaced the entire cosmos, causing all those who saw it to feel as if they were looking at a barrier.

"This... This is..."

The old man's mind trembled. The gray fog which was him started rising and falling violently due to the changes in his emotions. He slowly raised his head to the limit, and he found that he could still not see the top of the gigantic pillar.

When he activated his vast divine sense and used it to look at it, the fog which was him suddenly stopped trembling, as if it had become still. It seemed a single bit of emotion could be stirred up in his heart. He... was stunned speechless. His mind went blank, and there were no longer any thoughts in his head. The only thing that remained was the absent-minded state that came upon him due to extreme shock.

He could see that the surface of the gigantic pillar seemed like tree bark, but he could not believe that such a big tree that was completely inconceivable could exist in the world.

However, after a moment, when he saw the gigantic tree crown, the endless branches, and the entirety of the boundless tree, he descended into madness.

"What... What is this?! You... Who are you?!" He shivered. During that moment, his heart was filled with fear and disbelief.

"I am the person you wanted to Possess," Su Ming's gigantic purple Ecang clone stated flatly. His voice immediately reverberated in the cosmos with loud, booming sounds. Just the spread of his voice alone already caused the gray fog to tremble so much that it almost disintegrated.

"That's impossible! You're the Apostle! The Apostle inherits the Sun God and Moon Goddess' legacy, but the Sun God and Moon Goddess were injured badly during the era when all lives died. Even if you obtained their legacy, it's impossible for this sort of soul to appear in you!

"You... You aren't the Apostle!!!"

As the old man shouted shrilly, the gray fog which was him immediately started tumbling about and moving backwards, trying once again to escape from Su Ming's mind. However, he had already attempted this previously, and even if he tried it again at that moment, it was of little help.

This was Su Ming's mind. This was the cosmos formed by all one hundred thousand of his galaxies. This was the place where his soul was at its strongest. This was the place... where Su Ming was the master!

Su Ming had been able to Possess Ecang, and because of this, there were few lives in the world that could Possess him, because this task would be even more difficult than Su Ming Possessing Ecang in the past!

Almost the instant the old man descended into madness and the gray fog was about to escape at all cost, a gap tore open at the trunk of the Ecang tree that was Su Ming.

The gap looked like a gaping mouth that could devour everything.

Su Ming did not act quickly, but it was precisely because he was acting slowly that it brought such fear to the old man. That fear erupted endlessly from within him. He tried time and again to escape from the place while roaring in despair, but it was of no use. He could only... watch as the tree that was Su Ming slowly opened its mouth and gradually revealed a ferocious sight that caused him to scream.

"No! Let me go! Don't swallow me! I can become your servant!

"I... I can make the entire Yu Family become your servants. Don't kill me! I... I can conquer the entire Black Ink Planet for you!!"

The old man was already rambling at this point. The chance that he had been longing for tens of thousands of years had turned into the shadow of death. He had thought that this would be a chance for him to succeed, but in the blink of an eye, the tables were turned against him. He was about to pay with his life, and all of this was something that the old man could not accept.

"What is your name?" Su Ming's voice reverberated in the air with an unparalleled pressure. His voice was the will of heaven, and it was something that could not be refused.

Su Ming's question gave the old man hope that he had a chance to survive. He immediately answered without a single bit of hesitation, "Yu Han. I am the fourth Progenitor of the Yu Family, Yu Han..."

However, just as he said these words, the gaping mouth on the Ecang tree that was Su Ming sucked in a sharp breath.

With it, the one hundred thousand galaxies roared at the same time. All of them trembled violently as if the cosmos was about to collapse and as if the universe was about to be destroyed.

During that instant, a shrill scream of pain filled with despair came from the gray fog that was the old man. The gray fog was sucked in, and in an instant, it turned into wisps of smoke that charged into Ecang's gaping mouth.

"I've waited for tens of thousands of years, I've had the help from a dozen something generations of descendants throughout the ages, and after waiting for so long, someone had finally arrived, I can't accept this... I... can't accept this!"

The old man's distorted face appeared in the wisps of fog that had been sucked into Ecang's mouth. Hatred, despair, and a strong refusal to accept defeat filled his expression.

Yet he could do nothing to stop any of this. He had thought that what would come to him would be a cultivator that he could exploit at will. Never had he expected that what would come to him would be a terrifying existence surpassing those of ancient ferocious beasts.

.....

At the time, no one knew anything about what was happening in the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao. They could only see that the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, which was the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao in the sky at that moment and which was as huge as a mountain rock, was shining brightly.

The light continued changing nonstop, so the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here looked as if it had come back to life. There were also loud booming sounds coming from within it that were reverberating in the air and spreading in all directions.

Standing in the mid of the endless unconscious members of the Yu Family was Yu Rou, who was looking at the sky with a calm expression. Her lips slowly curled into a faint smile, though it went unnoticed by all.

That smile was very faint. In fact, even if anyone looked closely, it would still be very hard to see it. Only she herself knew just how happy she was during that instant.

'How dare you attempt to snatch the Apostle's body. Progenitor Yu Han, under the light of the Sun God and Moon Goddess... you won't succeed!'

These words echoed in Yu Rou's heart, and they caused that faint smile on her lips just moments ago.

As the third gate in the sky shone with a light that reached one hundred thousand feet wide, the ground beside Yu Rou started trembling violently. As it did so, cracks formed.

These cracks intersected with each other and gradually spread out, turning into huge ravines. As they did so, thirteen intersecting spots were formed around Yu Rou!

Wisps of gray fog erupted forth from those places. As the fog spread out and gathered together, it turned into thirteen figures that were several dozens of feet large.

Within the thirteen balls of fog, thirteen incredibly old men could be vaguely seen sitting cross-legged on the ground. It was as if the fog around them was their protection, or else they would be unable to venture out.

These thirteen old men were the thirteen people from the underground palace. Their faces were filled with excitement at that moment, and all of them had their heads lifted to look at the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here in the sky. Based on their numerous interactions with the fourth Progenitor throughout the ages, they knew that when the Apostle the Progenitor had been waiting for arrived and they attempted to Possess each other, the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here would shine with this sort of light.

And there was no way that the Progenitor, who had prepared for tens of thousands of years and could even use the strange power within the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, would have any chance of failure, unless he chose not to Possess the Apostle. Once he began the process of Possessing, then eventually, the one who would walk out would be the Progenitor.

That was why all of them had walked out of the underground palace; they wanted to be there to welcome the Progenitor when he ventured out. In fact, in the mid of their excitement, they could already imagine that when the Progenitor ventured out, then he, who possessed the treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, had control over the body of the Sun God and Moon Goddess' Apostle, and was skilled in controlling the strange power within the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, would be able to lead the Yu Family and make their family business incredibly great in Black Ink Planet.

In fact... he could even bring them back to Divine Essence Star Ocean in search for the members of the other branch of the Gate of Dao race. They could restore the Gate of Dao to its former glory. It would no longer be impossible for them to do this.

"The Progenitor will definitely succeed. Before long, he will come out of the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here!"

"The day the Yu Family will rise into power has finally come!" When the thirteen old men looked at the sky in excitement, Yu Rou stood by the side indifferently. No one saw the hint of derision that shone briefly in her eyes.

During that moment, the light from the third gate in the sky abruptly reached its brightest, looking like the sun in the eyes of anyone who saw it. The light from the gate shone on the ground and even brought with it waves of great, mighty pressure.

A figure appeared within the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here.

At the instant this figure took shape, the thirteen old men on the ground knelt down in the mid of their excitement.

"We welcome the Progenitor's egression!"

"We welcome the Progenitor's egression!"

Thirteen old voices rang in the air at the same time. The waves of sound formed by their voices were so great that they shook the sky and earth, rising into the sky with loud booms.

Yu Rou's face was also filled with devotion at that moment. As she lowered her head and worshiped the figure, she mumbled under her breath, "Congratulations to the Apostle's egression..."

However, her voice was drowned out by the noise of the thirteen old voices, and no one noticed that what she said at that moment was completely different from the words of everyone else.

Time passed, and in the blink of an eye, the span of a dozen something breaths went by. When the figure within the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here became clearer, the zealous voices from the thirteen old men on the ground became stronger.

"We welcome the Progenitor's egression!"

All the voices in the world seemed to have been drowned out by this sentence at that instant, making it seem as if it would be the only sound that would echo in the world.

The figure within the image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here became increasingly clearer. Nine breaths later, a violent bang forced its way through the waves of sound filled with zealousness. Su Ming... slowly walked out from the endless light coming from the third gate.

He looked as calm as usual, and there was not a hint of change that could be detected on him. When he walked out, his long hair danced in the air, and his robes fluttered, giving him an ethereal air, but the dignified look in his eyes made him seem as if he was a will that surpassed the will of the universe as he stood in the sky, and if he stood on the ground, he would be the God that would surpass all existences on land.

At the instant he walked out, the thirteen old men on the ground let out the strongest and most zealous cry of their lives.

"We welcome... the Progenitor's egression!"

Su Ming looked at the thirteen old men on the ground and at Yu Rou. Then, an incredibly eerie and strange smile that was difficult to grasp appeared on his lips.

Chapter 876: Spiked Club...

Once Su Ming swept his gaze over the thirteen zealous people on the ground, he cast a glance at Yu Rou before he turned his head around and looked at the gigantic image of Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here behind him.

He had devoured Yu Family's Progenitor and obtained some of his memories of the third age. Within those memories were some of the areas of the Divine Essence Star Ocean as well as the reason why he had fused with the Enchanted Vessel all those years ago.

'Within Divine Essence Star Ocean is a place known as the Place Where Spirits Died...'

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. From the memories he obtained from Yu Family's Progenitor, he knew that the man had entered Divine Essence Star Ocean to search for the signs of the Gate of Dao race based on the clues left behind by the previous generations within the Yu Family.

They had spent a long period of time to find traces of the Gate of Dao race during his generation, a lot of it courtesy to Yu Han. When he delved deep into Divine Essence Star Ocean, he discovered the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao and also that the place was a spot where spirits died!

This so called spot where spirits died could be considered an ancient ruin. It was the place where the tribes at the height of their power worshiped the Gods countless years ago, in an age even before the alien races came into existence.

After time passed, even though there were still plenty of alien races within Divine Essence Star Ocean, most of them had branched out from the prosperous tribes and gradually increased in number on their own. Because of this, very few of these alien races had completely inherited their legacy.

As for the tribes that had been at the height of their power in the past, most of them were destroyed due to a disaster that not even Yu Family's Progenitor knew about. Even the Gods they worshiped had either died or fell into deep sleep.

That was the case for the Sun God and Moon Goddess of the Gate of Dao. They were severely injured and sank into deep sleep. The place where their real bodies slept was the region known as... the Place Where Spirits Died in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Su Ming was certain that these memories were trustworthy because when he devoured the Sun God and Moon Goddess, he could tell clearly that they had not truly died. He had only devoured a part of them, and based on the words they said before they disappeared, Su Ming knew that their real bodies were not in Black Ink Planet.

Based on this judgement, Yu Family's Progenitor discovered that the Place Where Spirits Died was where the Sun God and Moon Goddess slept.

It was also due to the mysteries in that place that Yu Family Progenitor's soul was sucked into the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao for some unknown reason. After that, since his body no longer had any life force supplied to it, it became increasingly weaker and soon started rotting away, like a dead man's.

He dragged his rotting body and the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao back to his family in Black Ink Planet. Since his body continued rotting every single day, by the time he finally arrived, he could no longer persevere. His body disintegrated, and he died.

However, after his body was destroyed, he discovered that he had not died, but was contained within the treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here. In fact, he even realized that the Vessel Spirit within the Enchanted Vessel was also deep in sleep, which allowed him to temporarily become the Vessel Spirit.

After tens of thousands of years of examination and puzzling it out, he mastered the strange power within the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. With this, he secretly affected all the family members who came to challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao to find those who could help him in his plan to escape.

Under his arrangement, some of the incredibly outstanding family members managed to get to the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao, but they had not done so by obtaining the Sun God and Moon Goddess' acknowledgement in the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao. They had only managed to get to the Third Gate of Heavenly Dao with his help.

However, after multiple attempts, Yu Family's Progenitor realized that he could not Possess the members of Yu Family. Because of this, he had guests also challenge the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. Yet in the end, he discovered that he could Possess neither his family members nor the guests.

It was as if there was something missing within them.

After many years of investigation, he gradually found the reason. They lacked a form of power from the Gods. Only by Possessing those who had this power would he be able to move out of this place.

That was why the subsequent sequence of events had occurred.

Yu Family's Progenitor was incredibly wary of the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao and did not dare to get too close to it. He would only affect it in secret, because that place was the key to him becoming free. After mastering the strange power in the place after being trapped in this place for tens of thousands of years, his heart had become twisted. He wanted to devour the Apostle, because the Apostle had been acknowledged by the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao, and the power of the Gods would surely be contained within him.

The guests who had managed to come to the third gate were all killed by him in the place. In fact, some of the members of the family who did not have zealous faith in him were also killed.

With the cooperation of the handful of family members who ventured out, the information that he was inside was kept secret.

This continued until Yu Rou appeared thousands of years ago. When she arrived at the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao, she had been slightly acknowledged. This brought Yu Family's Progenitor great excitement, and he attempted to Possess her.

However, he failed in that Possession. The power of the Gods within Yu Rou was still too little; it was not enough for Yu Family's Progenitor to succeed. After he failed, he did not kill Yu Rou, but instead kept her around, hoping that she would grow up and become his way out.

All of these were the memories Su Ming obtained from Yu Family's Progenitor. When he turned his head around to look at the third gate, his eyes shone. He was incredibly interested in the Place Where Spirits Died, which belonged to the Gate of Dao race.

He lifted his right hand slowly and pushed it towards the third gate. The elephant's body shuddered, and bright light shone in its eyes. At the same time, the mountain rock shrank under the light and charged over at Su Ming.

When it landed on his palm, it turned into a white mountain rock. It looked like a piece of jade and was incredibly smooth. The white elephant on it looked as if it was alive, and the scale beam was even branded on the rock. It was emitting a gentle light.

The precious treasure!

Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here!

As Su Ming held the treasure in his hand, he sensed the power of Divine Essence within him boiling, as if it wanted to surge into the treasure completely. However, Su Ming could also sense clearly that unless his Ecang clone was here, he would only be able to activate a hint of the power within this treasure with his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole.

Only his Ecang clone would be able to awaken the Vessel Spirit within the treasure with the vast amount of Divine Essence he possessed, and only then would he be able to have it acknowledge Su Ming as its owner in order to activate part of its might. If he wanted to bring out the full power within the treasure, then his Ecang clone would need to devour another soul or even several of the other souls from the other nine Ecang souls.

"Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, what a treasure..." Su Ming mumbled.

He flung his right hand outwards, and the mountain rock on his palm disappeared, then with another swing of his arm, he walked towards the ground from midair. Just as he was about to descend, a thought suddenly appeared in his mind, and he turned his head around to look at Dao Avenue Mountain.

The mountain looked like it was made of clouds who were in the shape of a mountain. The black parts around the white mountain rocks formed the head of the malicious spirit. In fact, if someone looked at it for a prolonged period of time, they would have the false impression that the malicious spirit's hair was dancing. When Su Ming looked at the bat that could not escape from the malicious spirit's right hand, he swiftly seized the air in the direction of Dao Avenue Mountain.

The mountain let out a bang and started trembling.

"Come here!"

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. The veins on his right hand popped up, and at the instant he seized the air forcefully, Dao Avenue Mountain began trembling even more furiously. With a bang, the entire mountain rose from the ground and charged towards Su Ming.

The swift movement reverberated in the air as the mountain closed in on Su Ming in the blink of an eye. At that moment, he lifted his right hand and swung it.

"Become small!"

The mountain shrank swiftly.

"Smaller!"

With another bang, Dao Avenue Mountain shrank once again. However, at the instant it shrank this time, a focused glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and he took a step forward to appear before Dao Avenue Mountain, which was now only several hundreds of feet big. When he looked at a certain spot located at the back of the mountain, his eyes sparkled.

He saw that there was a huge crack behind the mountain rock, and there were several holes at the top of the crack, as if they had been left there after something with spikes struck it.

The crack also brought the image of a club with spikes to Su Ming's mind. The damage to the mountain was clearly caused by this sort of weapon.

'This Dao Avenue Mountain is clearly also a treasure. I won't need as much Divine Essence to activate it as I would need for Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here, but

it's still considered a large amount to me. Still, it's slightly easier to use compared to Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here...

'But such a grievous injury has been left on this Divine Essence Treasure, and the mark of this crack... seems rather familiar.' Su Ming frowned. After thinking about it carefully, a shudder suddenly ran through his body, and a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

He had seen a type of weapon that could cause this sort of crack before!

"Spiked club..."

Su Ming's breathing quickened slightly. He remembered why it was familiar now. He once had a spiked club that could change its size at will. When it fell against the ground or mountains, the cracks that would show up would be like this.

'I obtained that spiked club at the bottom of the sea, from within the endless layer of ice around the region where Great Yu Imperial Palace was frozen. There was an endless amount of strange looking people frozen in that ice.

'I was wondering about it in the past. Could it be...?'

Su Ming cast a scrutinizing glance at Dao Avenue Mountain. After remaining silent for a moment, he suddenly had even more speculations towards the mysteries of Yin Death Region.

'Yin Death Region... my homeland... the place where I grew up. Only now as I come into contact with the worlds outside, do I realize... that the secrets there are also fathomless.'

Su Ming shook his head. He would definitely return to Yin Death Region, and at that time, he would find all the greatest secrets of Yin Death Region to answer all of his questions.

He pointed towards Dao Avenue Mountain with his right index finger. The mountain shrank once again and turned into an object that looked like a piece of jade on his palm.

At the instant Su Ming touched the mountain, a thought appeared in his mind. He lowered his head and cast a glance at the item in his hand before putting it away while looking as if he was absorbed in his thoughts. Then, he landed on the ground.

At the instant he descended, the thirteen old men in front of him prostrated themselves on the ground, as if kneeling was no longer sufficient to express the respect they had in their hearts, and only by prostrating themselves on the ground would they be able to do so.

"Greetings, Progenitor!"

"Prepare a secret chamber for me, I will isolate myself to meditate for several days!" Su Ming stated flatly. His words sent the thirteen old men into action while they burned with zealous passion. Soon, an incredibly extravagant chamber was prepared for Su Ming.

"When I come out several days later, I will release all of you from the life of being unable to bask under the sun." Su Ming took a step forward and moved into the chamber. As the door fell shut with a loud boom, the thirteen old men prostrated themselves on the ground in respect.

Only Yu Rou's eyes were sparkling. She was an incredibly beautiful woman to begin with, and as her beautiful eyes sparkled, they gave rise to a striking image that could take a person's breath away.

Su Ming immediately sat down cross-legged in the chamber and sucked in a deep breath. He placed his hands on his knees with his palms turned upwards. White light shone on his hands, and the treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here as well as Dao Avenue Mountain appeared at the same time.

At the instant Su Ming closed his eyes, his body trembled, and the image of the statues that belonged to the Sun God and the Moon Goddess manifested behind him.

"The power that will exist as long as I believe in it will now belong to me!"

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, and booming sounds immediately reverberated in the chamber.

Chapter 877: Malicious Spirit Weighing an Elephant

On a normal occasion, there would probably be only one type of light.

However, at that moment, light was divided into two types. One of them was the overbearing, strong type of light, and the other was a gentle, weak type of light.

The brilliant light shining from the statues of the Sun God and Moon Goddess illuminated the entire chamber, so each spot in the room was covered in light. The overbearing light did not intersect with the gentle light, but instead divided the room into two halves of a circle with Su Ming at the center.

One side was incredibly domineering, while the other side was as gentle as flowing water.

There were even two types of different colors shining on Su Ming's shut eyes, so his body looked as if it had been segregated at that instant. A line running vertically down

the center of his nose separated his body into two different halves, and those two halves were illuminated by a strong ray of light and a dim ray of light respectively.

Su Ming's palms were turned upwards and placed on his knee, with Dao Avenue Mountain lying on this right hand. At that moment, while covered by the light, the treasure gradually gave off a feeling as if it had come to life. As the malicious spirit became increasingly more ferocious, the bat on its hand screeched.

After a moment, the malicious spirit on Dao Avenue Mountain whipped its head around. As its entire body was twisted, Dao Avenue Mountain floated into the air, and it turned into something akin to fog. It surrounded Su Ming, swimming between the strong and weak lights and giving him an incredibly bizarre air.

Su Ming's expression remained calm. He still had his eyes closed. The treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here on his left hand let out a booming sound at that moment. As it slowly came apart, it turned into the illusory image of an elephant and a scale before it also swam around Su Ming with the malicious spirit.

"Power that will exist as long as I believe in it, appear!"

Su Ming opened his eyes swiftly, and the bright light in his eyes looked as if it wanted to fuse with the strong and weak light in the chamber, giving off the feeling that a third type of light had appeared in the place.

At the instant he opened his eyes, the malicious spirit that was Dao Avenue swimming around him let out a roar towards the sky. As it roared, it lifted its left hand and seized the scale moving by its side.

When the scale was in its hands, it seemed like the malicious spirit had turned into a person that would balance a scale. At the same time he did so, the elephant turned into a long arc and naturally appeared on the scale pan.

All of this might have seemed to have happened over a long period of time, but in truth, the entire process was completed in the span of a few breaths. The malicious spirit's expression was no longer ferocious, but had instead an awe-inspiring air about it. At that moment, it seized the air and caught the bat to hang it on the scale beam.

At the instant this was done, what appeared before Su Ming was a picture of a malicious spirit weighing an elephant!

The bat was clearly the weight of the scale!

All of this was perfect, so perfect that Su Ming could not find a single flaw in it. It was as if the entire thing was supposed to appear this way.

"The elephant has two forms. One of them is its physical form, and the other is the illusory form on the scale!" an indistinct voice said from the malicious spirit's mouth in the form of a buzzing noise.

"The physical body of the elephant on the scale is like that of the form of the Heavenly Dao, not the power of the Antecedental Spirit. The thought of weighing this elephant is like a fantasy, and it can allow you to weigh... this elephant for the span of three breaths!"

The picture of the malicious spirit weighing the elephant lasted for about the span of three breaths in front of Su Ming before all of it turned into two long arcs that charged into his eyes. The malicious spirit that was Dao Avenue and the bat acting as the weight seeped into Su Ming's left eye before disappearing without a trace, while the elephant and the pan entered his right, and with a flash, they disappeared, too.

A shudder ran through Su Ming's body.

"Believe in me..."

As Su Ming mumbled to himself, a clouded look appeared in his eyes. He could truly sense the power contained within his eyes at that moment, because that power had taken the form of an incredibly loud voice in his mind.

There was a supreme, awe-inspiring might contained in that voice. It sounded like a roar, and it was echoing endlessly in Su Ming's mind. He did not sense any form of danger from it, however. There was no spirit contained in that voice preparing to Possess him either. This was a voice that had existed many years ago and seemed to have been left behind in the passages of time.

That voice could not be heard normally. Only when a person was illuminated by the light from the Sun God and Moon Goddess while coming into possession of the malicious spirit that was Dao Avenue as well as the elephant that represented peace and used Divine Essence to activate them so that the picture of the malicious spirit weighing the elephant would appear would that voice show up.

Perhaps it was more accurate to say that the picture of the malicious spirit weighing the elephant was the core of the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, and the strange power contained within the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao which Su Ming desired... was the three words in that sentence hidden in the picture of the malicious spirit weighing the elephant!

"Believe in me..." The voice continued echoing in his mind, and he had a feeling as if he was taken by it.

The voice was hidden in that illusory picture, and the picture was concealed by the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. The voice and the three words were the core and source of the strange power.

"I didn't expect that the power I am obsessed with... would be developed from this one sentence." Dark light shone in Su Ming's eyes. At that moment, he looked incredibly mystifying, and even his mumblings sounded as if they held a vague and insubstantial feeling in them.

"The ancient air contained in that sentence... with just it alone, such great power was gathered together. This is definitely... not something the Sun God and Moon Goddess were capable of doing!

"The Three Gates of Heavenly Dao might have come into being even before the Sun God and Moon Goddess. Perhaps more accurately speaking... this is a treasure left behind by an existence that is even more ancient than the Sun God and Moon Goddess!"

Su Ming's heart beat quickly a few times. There was a dark light in his eyes, and he slowly tried to clench his fists without moving them away from his knees.

"I will need to understand this power. Yu Family's Progenitor managed to understand some of it after groping about blindly, and he was capable of executing this sort of power... I can feel that if I grasp this power completely and absorb the strong and weak rays of light around me back into my body... then I will succeed."

While he was in the process of slowly furling his hands into fists, the light in the chamber began twisting about intensely, as if it had turned into threads, and they were gathering around Su Ming's hands from all directions.

Time passed, and in the blink of an eye, one day went by.

During that one day, Su Ming never blinked. The dark light in his eyes became increasingly stronger, while the edges of the chamber had turned black from their previously illuminated state.

If anyone looked over, they would find the chamber to be an incredibly bizarre sight, as if light had been restricted to a particular region and was separated from the darkness around the area. It was as if there was a barrier that had divided them.

Su Ming's face was illuminated in flashes of dim and bright light. An endless amount of red could be seen vaguely in the dark light in his eyes. He might have looked calm on the outside, but there was a storm raging in the depths of his heart. That voice still lingered around and echoed in his mind time and again, each sentence roaring in his head.

In the beginning, that voice would only in a long while, but now, it seemed to have connected together with Su Ming's mind and continued echoing endlessly.

"Believe in me... Believe in me... Believe in me..."

There was no intonation within that ancient voice, and it had already replaced all of Su Ming's thought processes as well as his consciousness. It was as if his body was empty at that moment, and only that voice was continuously spreading out through him

All of this might seem dangerous, but in truth, Su Ming knew that the danger posed by this was not high. He had never let down his guard either. This was an attempt to gain an epiphany from a voice left behind from ancient times.

If he succeeded, he would be able to obtain the power contained in the words, and if he failed, he would only fail, that was all.

Another day went by, which meant that Su Ming had already sat in the chamber for two full days. There were countless echoes of that voice in his head by that point, and they were slowly showing signs of gathering once again instead of spreading outwards.

When the third day passed, the voices in Su Ming's head finally completed the process of merging into one instead of spreading out, and they turned into one sentence once again.

"Believe in me..."

This sentence seemed different compared to all the other sentences he had heard previously. He might not have been able to tell the difference, but at the instant the voice reverberated in his mind, a loud bang rang out in his head.

In the mid of this loud bang, his consciousness was warped, as if his soul had been forcefully dragged to a strange world by that one sentence.

That place was a broken piece of sky, which was dark blue and swiftly crumbling. Loud, booming sounds echoed in the universe. He could see pillars of light shooting through the galaxy to reach this place, bringing piercing whistles in their wake. Wherever they went, space would shatter, and the sky would break down.

When these pillars of light landed on the ground, ring-shaped waves of impact were instantly formed, and as they swept outwards, layers upon layers of the ground were destroyed.

It was as if this was the apocalypse, and the world was being destroyed at the moment.

"Believe in me..."

At that moment, a tremendous voice suddenly came from the ground. Su Ming looked over, and he instantly saw a person standing on a mountain situated on the crumbling ground that was rising and falling like waves!

It was a young man dressed in a blue robe, with a head full of white hair. He had average looks, and looked so ordinary that there was nothing outstanding about him. However, there was a thick ancient air about him.

It was as if he had experienced far too many things in his life, which resulted in him possessing a shocking presence that could not be described with words but would cause all people to be unable to forget it the moment they saw it.

With hands placed behind his back, he stood at the top of the mountain. Grief was in his eyes. His robes fluttered and white hair danced to the wind. He seemed to be looking at the sky as his voice echoed in the air.

"Believe in me..."

Su Ming's heart trembled. He looked at the man and saw numerous living creatures kneeling down on the crumbling ground before him. These living creatures were trembling, clearly afraid of the world collapsing around them, but none of them got up to escape.

They looked at the man with white hair as if his words were a form of conviction and deserved utmost respect.

"Someone once told me that those who believe in me will find that I will not die even if the world dies. Even if the world is destroyed, I will not be destroyed... Today, I will tell all of you this..."

"Believe in me..."

Su Ming's heart trembled. Everything before his eyes shattered abruptly and turned into countless shards. As these shards danced about, they slowly disappeared before him.

Su Ming "opened" his eyes. But perhaps it would be more accurate to say that his physical eyes had been open since the start, so the eyes he opened this time were the eyes of his soul.

He was still in the chamber, and everything was dark around him... But in his left hand was a sun shining with a strong, overbearing light. In his right hand was a moon shining with a weak, gentle light. All the light in the chamber was gathered by the two of them.

"I understand now."

An ancient air appeared about Su Ming's face. If anyone took a closer look, they would find that the ancient air about him... was rather similar to the one about the man in blue.

Chapter 878: Residual

It had been seventeen days since Su Ming stepped into the chamber.

The chamber was not located above ground, but was within the huge underground palace built under the many towers of the Yu Family. The underground palace had been built tens of thousands of years ago, and it was the most secretive spot in the Yu Family.

At that moment, in the depths of the underground palace outside Su Ming's secret chamber were two gigantic stone flaps of a door that were interlaced with each other to form a ghastly door of hundreds of feet in size.

There were numerous blood-red runic symbols on the door. As they shone in alternating flashes of bright and dark light, a powerful wave spread out from them. In fact, even if a cultivator in the later stage of World Plane Realm attacked at full force, they would find it hard to destroy the door within a short period of time.

The thirteen old men were sitting respectfully outside the door and meditating there as if they were Dharma Protectors. Their zealous attitude towards Yu Family's Progenitor made them willing to give up their lives to provide protection for the Progenitor.

If anyone dared to break in at this point of time, they would find themselves coming face-to-face against the thirteen old men's rabid attacks.

Yu Rou was sitting to the side of the circle formed by the thirteen old men. Her expression remained elegant as she sat by the side quietly, creating a stark contrast against these thirteen old men. Her beauty was also something that did not fit into the eerie and decaying image the thirteen people presented.

"The Progenitor has entered isolation for seventeen days... Could something have happened to him?" After waiting for seventeen days, one of the thirteen old men could not help but become anxious. After all, before Su Ming had entered isolation to meditate, he had said he would be gone only for a few days.

"Quiet. The Progenitor's level of cultivation is exceedingly high, how could anything possibly happen to him? This is clearly the Progenitor absorbing the Apostle's life force so that he could get greater control over his new body," someone beside him immediately retorted. Clearly, the person who had rebuked the old man just now had a slightly higher status, so the old man who had been worried immediately lowered his head and did not say anything else.

"Not necessary!" an ancient voice came languidly from a skeletal old man by the side.

"Did any of you ever think of the Progenitor possibly failing to Possess the Apostle?"

"That's impossible. With the Progenitor's level of cultivation and the preparations he made over tens of thousands of years, there's no possible way he would have failed."

"That's right. What the seventh said is possible. What if... he failed?"

"If he failed, then the person who appeared before us previously was not the Progenitor but the Apostle!"

Many pairs of eyes of the thirteen old men sparkled at that time as they communicated with each other by sending their thoughts.

Only Yu Rou remained in the distance, quiet and not listening to any of their words.

In the mid of their long wait and as doubts as well as speculations were gradually born within them, another three days passed.

Twenty days had passed since Su Ming stepped into the chamber. On this day, it was dusk in the world outside the underground palace. There was a gentle breeze blowing through the land, swaying the trees. It was at that moment that a booming sound suddenly echoed in the air within the underground palace.

The appearance of this sound immediately caused the thirteen old men to swiftly lift their heads and fix their eyes on the gate of the chamber. They also moved to kneel on the ground.

That booming sound came from the door to the chamber. This was the sound of the door being slowly opened from within. As those booming sounds became increasingly louder, the doors swung open to reveal a slit in-between.

The slit gradually grew wider. After a moment, when the doors completely swung open, the thirteen old men did not care about what sort of speculations they had in their hearts and immediately said respectfully, "We respectfully greet the Progenitor!"

With a bang, the stone door swung completely open. It was dark inside. The green candle flames in the underground palace looked as if they wanted to venture deep into the darkness in the chamber, but were blocked outside the door. It was as if there was a force that could not be seen obstructing all forms of light from entering the room.

The sound of footsteps gradually came from the darkness and echoed in the underground palace. That noise suggested that the owner was moving at a leisurely pace. Several breaths later, Su Ming's figure appeared within the stone chamber and

was revealed before the people. His footsteps came to a halt, and he did not continue walking forward.

He stood in the darkness. The dim green light one step away from him enveloped the area around him. Because of this, Su Ming was able to see the area outside clearly, but the people outside could only see a faint blur when they looked towards him.

Su Ming did not respond to the old men's words. He stood in the darkness and swept his gaze across everyone, and a dead silence settled around them.

It was as if even the sounds of breathing had disappeared. An oppressive feeling gradually rose in the air. The thirteen old men could sense this incredibly clearly. They knelt on the ground and did not dare lift their heads. However, they could feel the pores on their bodies shrinking, and their hair rose. That was the instinctual reaction that a person would get when they were in the face of danger.

It was precisely because they did not lift their heads that the feeling within them grew stronger. They could sense an incredibly evil presence spreading out from the chamber. It was a presence born from the perfect fusion between an overbearing and a gentle aura.

That presence changed constantly, so no one was able to get a clear grasp on it. When it gave off that overbearing presence, it seemed as if it could destroy all lives, but when it was gentle, it gave a sticky feeling, as if it was a swamp that would prevent a person from climbing out the moment they stepped in. The thirteen old men became no longer certain of their guesses, unable to discern the truth of things.

As these thirteen people were busy being nervous, Yu Rou remained calm by the side. However, that was just how she appeared. In truth, she was also shivering slightly, but those shivers were not distinct.

Only after ten breaths had passed did the presence gradually disperse. At the instant the thirteen old men sighed in secret, Su Ming took the final step and walked into the light from the dark.

His body appeared fully before everyone. Long gray hair, long white robes, and a boundless ancient air on that handsome face of his that was nigh enchanting. That ancient air did not seem to belong to him, but due to some reasons, some of it had come to temporarily stick around him.

That ancient presence was definitely not intentional. If a person had not lived for a sufficient amount of years and had not seen through all forms of illusions, then this presence would definitely not appear.

Because of this ancient air, the hearts of the thirteen old men trembled. The waning presence on their bodies seemed too thin before that ancient presence about Su Ming. In fact, they did not even have the right to be called old.

As the thirteen old men's hearts were shaken, Su Ming looked towards them with an indifferent gaze. His eyes were like swamp water, completely calm, but if anyone took a closer look, they would immediately get lost in them. The profound expression in his eyes was hidden deep within them, and even contained a slight presence that would cause others to be compelled to believe in him. It was as if... under this gaze, everything Su Ming said could be trusted.

This was... the power that would exist as long someone believed in it. This was the epiphany Su Ming had obtained from the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao. Once he fused that epiphany with his Illusions of the Stars, Sun, and Moon, it could be said that this divine ability became the strongest and most mysterious of all his divine abilities.

Once he used it, the weather would change, and the world would be void of light.

"Do you believe in me?" Su Ming asked coolly. He had just recovered from the strange picture in his mind, which was why that ancient air remained about him while the figure of the man with white hair remained in his heart. In fact, even the man's grief as he looked at the sky remained in Su Ming's eyes.

That ancient presence, that figure, that grief, and everything that remained about Su Ming at that moment erupted from within him in an unseen manner as he asked that question. Because of it, the air in the underground palace distorted, and ripples spread out through the area and fill it swiftly. In an instant, they filled up the entire underground palace.

There was a strange power contained in his voice. As it echoed in the air, even the green candle flames in the place swayed a few times.

In fact, during that instant, Su Ming's appearance seemed to have changed as well, giving off an indistinct feeling to others. It was as if he had turned into the man with white hair during that moment, who had his hands placed behind his back as he looked at the sky while the world collapsed around him.

This was not Su Ming's power, but the residue of the power he saw while understanding it. In fact, it could be said that this was Su Ming using the power of that man with white hair, who had been able to form a terrifying divine ability with just a single sentence he left behind.

This form of borrowing the man's power was only possible for Su Ming at this moment. Even if he tried to gain another epiphany from the sentence, he would not be able to do this, because once he completed the process of understanding the sentence, it had

disappeared into the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, vanishing to return to the time in which it belonged.

Unless Su Ming could truly understand it, then this divine ability of his would have reached its strongest at this moment.

Indescribably powerful booms rang out in the hearts of the thirteen old men who were all in the later stage of World Plane Realm. In the mid of those sounds, Su Ming's voice shot up in all their ears, their minds, and their souls.

That voice brought with it a tone that suggested the owner would allow no doubt and resistance to his words, an arrogance that even the world would have to submit and even the universe would have to lower its head. If any forms of life did not obey him, then no matter what level of cultivation they possessed, they would instantly be reduced to ashes.

As the booming sound echoed in the hearts of the thirteen old men, they coughed up a mouthful of blood and had blood pouring out of their eyes, mouth, nose, and ears. They staggered backwards, and once they moved thousands of feet, they were pale and had shock written on their faces. In their eyes, a ball of fire was contained.

That was... a purple ball of fire. It was a ball of fire that burned even hotter than the zeal they had for Yu Family's Progenitor.

Even Yu Rou coughed up blood when the residue of that presence erupted from Su Ming's body and she was continuously forced backwards. Her calmness was gone, her elegance had vanished, and everything within her mind was shredded to pieces during that moment. A single will forcefully made its way into her head.

It was a will that compelled her to obey Su Ming!

And the same ball of purple flames also appeared in her eyes!

"I believe in you..." Yu Rou's breathing quickened. As she mumbled out these words, the thirteen old men let out zealous roars.

"I believe in you!"

"I believe in you!"

The thirteen voices reverberated in the air, and endless echoes rang through the underground palace. As they continued spreading outwards, there was a false impression that the underground palace itself was trembling.

As they said these words, Su Ming slowly closed his eyes. The residue of the ancient presence about him disappeared, and his body was no longer an indistinct blur.

'Your power is to let others believe in you and worship you from the bottom of their hearts... For myself, I will choose to... make them obey me!'

Su Ming opened his eyes. His appearance was strange and enchanting, and the light in his eyes gave others a feeling like they were looking at an endless abyss.

Chapter 879: Evil

As the voices of the thirteen old men echoed in the underground palace, the gray fog on their bodies started tumbling about. It originally served the purpose of providing shade from the sun, but that moment, when Su Ming lifted his hand to swing at it, booming sounds rang out.

"Those who believe in me will obtain the protection of the Ecang galaxies that I, Su, possess," Su Ming stated flatly. As he swung his arm, the noise from the fog reached its peak, but soon, the sound disappeared.

The fog dispersed to reveal thirteen skeletal old men prostrating themselves on the ground. They might only be skin and bones, but there was a presence within them that made it seem as if there was a windstorm contained within them.

"Thank you for granting us a new life, Progenitor!"

The thirteen old men's faces were filled with zeal. The purple flames in their eyes burned furiously, and once they replaced their pupils, their eyes turned purple.

That purplish hue in their eyes did not remain stiff and unchanging, but contained the sparkle of life that each person should have. Once these thirteen men said their reply, the residue of the ancient presence about Su Ming's body returned to where it should belong, in the passages of time.

"The Yu Family will remain the Yu Family. It will be enough for all of you here to know about my existence. You may all leave now. Yu Rou, stay back," Su Ming said calmly and walked forward. With one step, he moved into the innermost part of the underground palace. There was a flight of stairs there. This area was built like an altar, and there was a gigantic stone chair there.

Su Ming stood in front of the stone chair, then turned around and slowly sat down on the stone chair.

At the instant he did so, an awe-inspiring presence spread out from his body and filled up the entire area. He referred to himself with his family name before these people. Before this, he would have definitely not done such a thing. However, as of then, these thirteen old men as well as Yu Rou had been turned into existences... that were similar

to that of an Apostle after Su Ming used that residue of the ancient presence and the Art of Believing on them.

Su Ming was doing the exact same thing as what the Sun God and Moon Goddess did to turn others into their Apostles after making people believe in them.

The thirteen old men immediately voiced their obedience. They lowered their heads and left. Soon, they would appear before the Yu Family and would shock all of its members, who would then burn with zeal because of them. In fact, they would bring the Yu Family to open the curtains to a new struggle for power in Black Ink Planet.

Perhaps they would still be unable to lead their family to become the greatest family in Black Ink Planet, but it was more than likely that they would escape their current state. They would become the leading family for all middle-sized auction halls.

When the thirteen old men left, Yu Rou lowered her head and knelt quietly in front of Su Ming. She did not say a single word.

Even when the area around them was enveloped in dead silence once again, Su Ming still did not speak. Instead, he sat on the stone chair and stared at Yu Rou.

Time trickled by, and Yu Rou gradually found that she could not keep a calm expression on her face. The purple flames in her eyes were burning furiously, and confusion as well as struggle slowly appeared on her face.

"Give me a reason why I should not kill you." Su Ming's voice broke the silence, and his words echoed in the air.

"My Lord, why would you want to kill me?" Yu Rou lifted her head to reveal her face, which possessed a beauty that could cause hearts to pound in excitement and could take a man's breath away.

"Is it because I hid the secrets of the Enchanted Treasure Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here? Progenitor Yu Han might have planned this for tens of thousands of years, but he is not a God. He cannot be considered an Antecedental Spirit, much less an Ancestral Spirit. He is just a cultivator who is a Succeeding Spirit.

"If a cultivator who is just a Succeeding Spirit like him could truly Possess you, then... you would not be the Apostle. As long as you were the Apostle, Progenitor Yu Han could only fail," Yu Rou whispered softly. Her voice was incredibly pleasant to the ears, and it moved gently through the underground palace.

"Not enough." Su Ming shook his head.

Yu Rou bit her bottom lip. After remaining silent for a moment, she spoke once again.

"Progenitor Yu Han might be an ancestor of the Yu Family, but he tried to Possess me before. He might have failed in the end, but I will never forget this.

"I wanted him dead! I wanted him to be killed by the Apostle after he failed to Possess him. In fact, I once had the thought that I... would no longer need to be afraid if the Progenitor was Possessed by the Apostle."

Su Ming had a calm expression on his face. This time, he did not open his mouth to speak, but neither did he shake his head. Instead, he closed his eyes and waited for Yu Rou to continue speaking.

She lowered her head and fell silent for a time.

"I knew since the start... that you weren't the Apostle." After a long while, Yu Rou lifted that enticing head of hers and looked at Su Ming. "You might have the presence of the Sun God and Moon Goddess on you and you might have walked out of the second gate, but I know that you devoured the spirits of the Sun God and Moon Goddess in the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao.

"At the instant you began devouring them, they sent word to me and ordered me to have the entire Yu Family prevent you from devouring them. In fact, if I had chosen to obey them at that moment, then at the moment you started absorbing the souls of the Sun God and Moon Goddess, the thirteen Progenitors would have attacked, and even you... would have found it hard to withstand their attacks."

Yu Rou's face was slightly pale. The purple flames were burning in her eyes and were rapidly enveloping her heart and soul. She was not like the thirteen old men. They might have incredibly high levels of cultivation, but they did not have a power in them to resist that strange divine ability Su Ming had cast. This was a form of oppression from a superior life form on an inferior life form.

However, Yu Rou was different. She was... after all, the chosen one by the Sun God and Moon Goddess. She might not have fulfilled the conditions to be Possessed by Progenitor Yu Han, but she was clearly different from the average cultivator.

Su Ming opened his eyes to reveal a pair of profound eyes as he asked indifferently, "What do you know of Ancestral Spirit, Antecedental Spirit, and Succeeding Spirit?"

"This is a legend. Due to the age of the legend, there should be no one who knows whether it is true or false." Yu Rou hesitated for a moment before she chose to tell Su Ming all that she knew.

"Legend has it that when the sky, the earth, the universe, the heavens, the galaxy, and the cosmos had yet to take form, the first living things that were born were known as... Ancestral Spirits.

"They created life, which is why we have so many races and so many different types of living beings.

"These living beings worshiped the Ancestral Spirits. In the endless passage of time, among the races that did so, life forms that could bear the power of the Ancestral Spirits slowly came into existence. They were known as Antecedental Spirits. Some people believe that the word Antecedental refers to Immortals, since the Immortals' Dao will eventually turn them into Gods, but there are some that believe that the word Antecedental refers to the binary opposite before and after. Since the era was different, the words were different. However, the meaning behind them was the same, despite the fact that the words weren't alike."

After saying this much, You Rou paused for a moment before she spoke again.

"A disaster no one knows about caused all manner of living to die or fall to sleep. It didn't matter whether it was the Ancestral Spirits or those who became Antecedental Spirits due to their worship were able to escape from the disaster.

"As the disaster went on, the races fell to ruin. They were either dissolved or destroyed, and in the end, they were no more. This was the case for the Gate of Dao race.

"In the endless passage of time after the disaster, there were no longer any Ancestral Spirits or Antecedental Spirits, but the people could see the changes in the universe, could see the world, the planets, could sense the rules and laws in the universe, and from then on, consolidate some of the cultivation methods to slowly create their own cultivation systems.

"It was... a cultivation system that aimed to achieve perfection and become a superior life form. The system for each race was different, but their goal was the same. Over the course of time, the outstanding ones who practiced this sort of cultivation system were known as Succeeding Spirits.

"By now, even Succeeding Spirits are incredibly rare, and due to dissemination and growth of the numerous races in the universe, the people who practice these sort of cultivation systems are known as cultivators. Based on the ancient titles, some of them could be known as Succeeding Spirits.

"The Sun God and Moon Goddess were Antecedental Spirits... and they were very ancient. In fact, I suspect that their slumber had caused them to fall to being life forms that were only Succeeding Spirits."

Yu Rou spoke softly, her words echoing in the underground palace, but Su Ming's expression remained calm as he digested them.

After a moment, he asked coolly, "What is Yin Essence?"

His question immediately caused Yu Rou's face to turn slightly paler. She did not speak, but with anguish on her face, she slowly lowered her head and lifted her hands to gradually undress before Su Ming.

As her robes fell off to reveal a skintight singlet that showed off her beautiful figure, her pretty face and figure brought about an image that could make others' hearts pound. It was a feast that no one could refuse.

"The power of Yin Essence is a type of Divine Essence that I obtained in the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao. It slowly grows in my body, pushing my level of cultivation to its peak. It will allow me to become a life form in-between Succeeding Spirits and Successor Spirits. I may even be able to reach a breakthrough and become a Successor Spirit.

"At that time, I will be summoned by my mission and will offer up everything of myself to the Moon Goddess.

"If you could devour the Moon Goddess in the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao, then you can definitely devour my Yin Essence. I can... give it to you as long as you give me my freedom back, so I won't be a puppet who can't control its own fate." Yu Rou lifted her head. The burning purple flames in her eyes had almost replaced all of her pupils. She looked at Su Ming with her pale face as she walked closed to him.

Su Ming's expression was calm. Not a hint of change could be spotted on him. When Yu Rou gradually came over to stand in front of him, he looked at her beautiful form and continued watching as she slowly lowered her body, as if she was kneeling down to worship him.

He lifted his right hand and placed it on her skin, which looked as if it would break if the wind so much as blew on it, then began to slowly trace his finger through the spots where her curves were. Wherever his finger went, that part of Yu Rou's body would immediately begin trembling from nervousness.

When Su Ming's finger slid to her face, he lifted her chin, forcing her head up. Then, he slowly got closer to her, to the point that they could sense each other's breathing and heartbeat.

"No matter what reason it is, those who scheme against me will never know freedom in their lives again," he said softly. His words made Yu Rou tremble, and her face turned even paler.

"Judging by the method with which you will offer up your Yin Essence, you will clearly become my woman ... but your Yin Essence is not enough of a compensation for you to become my woman."

Su Ming lifted his head. There was a smile on his lips. A strange light shone in his eyes, giving him an indescribable, mysterious, and enchanting air.

Yu Rou lowered her head and whispered softly, "Has anyone told you before that you give others... a feeling that you're incredibly evil?"

"Evil... I like that word."

Su Ming stood up and took a step forward before he disappeared into the underground palace, leaving behind Yu Rou still wearing her skintight singlet and a complicated expression on her face.

Chapter 880: Getting to Know Lie Shan

This was a season with ample rain in Black Ink Planet. It had been cloudy for several days, and on this day, rain poured down from the sky.

The rain fell on the ground, filling the entire world with an indistinct feeling. Su Ming was sitting cross-legged in one of the towers of the Yu Family while looking at the rain outside his window. There was a scroll made of jade slips placed in front of him. On it was the map of Black Ink Planet, the forces of power in it and the locations of each auction hall.

In fact, there was a large portion of Divine Essence Star Ocean depicted on that jade slip scroll as well. However, while that portion might seem large, in truth, compared to the vast Divine Essence Star Ocean, the area drawn on the map by the members of the Yu Family over the countless years was just a small part of that huge galaxy.

Su Ming had picked up the scroll, but he did not immediately look at it. Instead, he looked at the rain outside the window with a pensive look in his eyes.

"The elephant has two forms. One of them is its physical form, and the other is the illusory form on the scale. The physical body of the elephant on the scale is like that of the form of the Heavenly Dao, not the power of the Antecedental Spirit. The thought of weighing this elephant is like a fantasy, and it can allow you to weigh... this elephant for the span of three breaths!"

The words spoken when the malicious spirit weighed the elephant while he was in the chamber echoed in Su Ming's mind.

'This sentence isn't that easy to understand, but now that I think about it, this 'elephant has two forms' means that it has a physical and an illusory form. The physical form is the elephant's real body, and the illusion... is the scene that people usually speak of. In

some sense, this elephant is not referring to a living creature... but a form of atmosphere and environment.' A sparkle appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

'If that's the case, then I can understand the second and third sentences. Weighing the elephant's real body is like weighing the supreme lord of the Gate of Dao race. But all life forms who have yet to become Antecedental Spirits are unable to do this, only those who are Antecedental Spirits can do so.

'The third sentence can also be understood as weighing an atmosphere and an illusion, but what does the final 'it can allow you to weigh this elephant for the span of three breaths' mean...?' Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he shook his head and buried the question in his heart.

His gaze fell on the jade slip scroll, and he began looking through it.

There was a storage bag beside Su Ming. Once every few breaths, he would put his hand deep into that storage bag, then bring out a crystal to place it on the scroll. That crystal would flash a few times before fusing into the scroll.

The jade slip scroll was incredibly mysterious. Perhaps it was because it had been around for a long time, but it would be damaged every time someone examined it. Because of this, it would need to be nourished by crystals once in a while if its contents were examined.

There was a veil on Yu Rou's face, who was nearby. Her temperament currently was greatly different from before. In fact, even the ripples of power from her cultivation base were incredibly weak. She looked as if she was only in the initial stage of World Plane Realm and not the later stage of World Plane Realm, which she originally had.

She sat on her heels by Su Ming's side quietly. She was sitting in the mid of the green smoke spreading out from the censers in the room, which gave her an otherworldly feeling.

There was a pot of wine boiling in front of her. She lifted the pot up with her fair hands and poured the contents gently into a wine cup before she placed it by Su Ming, who was still reading through the jade slip scroll.

Her appearance and her actions made it look as if she was a maidservant.

This was supposed to be a very artistic scene. Faint green smoke swirled about in the air, an otherworldly maidservant served by her master's side, rain poured outside the window, the rushing of it echoed in the air like the noise of nature... but in this scene, there were three things that did not fit in.

The bald crane was rolling about on the ground with a displeased look, and it was doing so nonstop...

"Crystals! You promised me that you would give me crystals! Y-y-you... You're going overboard! There're so many crystals, give me some! Oh, my crystals... Kill me... Those are all my crystals..."

"You... ah... How can you put crystals in there? Oh heavens, this is the 379th piece. Those are all crystals, sparkling 379 crystals, you know?!" As the bald crane screamed shrilly, it stared straight at Su Ming. When it saw him placing the crystals one by one into the jade slip scroll as he read it, the bald crane almost went mad.

However, Su Ming completely ignored its shrill screams, and even Yu Rou did not bother with it. She looked at the boiling wine with an elegant expression on her face, as if she did not hear a single thing.

The other thing that did not fit in... was a big yellow dog.

It was lying not too far away and staring at Yu Rou with a hostile look, occasionally letting out threatening growls. It was as if Yu Rou's existence made it sense some form of threat, for some unknown reason.

'Damn it, how could a woman as pretty as my young mistress be around here? Judging by Su Ming's actions, he has clearly acknowledged her damned presence! I can't allow this!' Thoughts fled through the big yellow dog's head as it continued thinking about what its young mistress would do if she was around. The threatening glare and hostile look became increasingly more pronounced.

The final thing that did not fit in was Yu Chen Hai.

He sat calmly by the side, having been the one who gave Su Ming the jade slip scroll. Occasionally, he would look at Su Ming, but most of the time, he would sneak peeks at Yu Rou.

He constantly felt that there was something familiar about that woman, but for some unknown reason, he could not remember where he had seen her before, but this was not the main point. It, of course, was that even though the woman wore a veil over her face and covered most of her looks, preventing others from seeing her clearly, there was still a beauty about her that caused other people's hearts to pound in excitement.

This beauty caused Yu Chen Hai's heart to race.

'This shouldn't be. With my level of cultivation, this shouldn't happen, but why is this woman giving me a sense of closeness. It's precisely because of this sense of closeness that I'm feeling such a great urge in me.'

It was with great difficulty that Yu Chen Hai quelled the feeling in his heart. He no longer dared to look at the woman, worried that he would make Su Ming misunderstand him. That was why even though he still wanted to look at her, he had to force that urge down.

"Senior Su, there are three days left before I have to host my auction..." he quickly said in a low voice.

Su Ming's status had already changed in the Yu Family. To the others, he was a guest, but the members of the family were not privy to the real truth.

"I understand." Su Ming nodded. He picked up a crystal and placed it on the jade slip scroll to continue reading it.

"About that... if you have time, should we look at the other family's auctions and get familiar with how an auction operates?" Yu Chen Hai quickly asked.

Su Ming looked as if he did not hear his words and did not answer.

Yu Chen Hai smiled wryly, not knowing what he should say next. He instinctively looked towards Yu Rou again, and at the moment he looked at her, she lifted her head and cast him a glance as well. Then, for some unknown reason, the hint of a faint smile appeared on her lips under the veil.

When Yu Chen Hai saw that smile, his heart trembled. Then, unable to control himself, he became infatuated with her as he continued looking at her.

With the three discordant elements in the picture, the atmosphere in the tower became slightly strange. Su Ming continued reading the jade slip scroll, his right hand reaching deep into the storage bag to take out crystals from time to time. He had already read through most of the jade slip scroll, and what remained were a few things that had happened in Black Ink Planet during the past ten thousand years. At that moment, he picked up a crystal, but just as he was about to place it on the jade slip scroll, his right hand came to an abrupt halt.

As his right hand stopped moving, a feeling as if something was being held back immediately appeared in the room. This feeling was instantly noticed by Yu Rou. The bald crane was also momentarily stunned and stopped rolling out while screeching, but instead looked at Su Ming with surprise.

Even the big yellow dog which had been looking at Yu Rou with a hostile expression blinked a few times before it looked at Su Ming.

Only Yu Chen Hai remained besotted and could not get himself out of it.

"Lie Shan Family rose to power in Black Ink Planet ten thousand years ago. The Progenitor of the family is Lie Shan Xiu. His origins are mysterious and unfathomable, and his level of cultivation is incredibly high... He is a man of great talent and vision, and in ten thousand years, he brought his family into the list of those who can host middle-sized auctions."

This was the sentence Su Ming saw in the jade slip.

"Lie Shan Xiu is an ambitious and formidable person. His origins might not be known, but he must definitely be a renowned person in the galaxy from which he came. However... even after the numerous investigations conducted on him, not a single clue can be found about this person from Divine Essence Star Ocean or the four Great Galaxies in the world outside..."

Su Ming had a calm expression on his face, but a huge storm was raging in his heart. In fact, that storm had turned into loud, thunderous booms that roared and reverberated in his mind. His calmness was just a facade.

He might have had a few speculations previously, but when he truly discovered it, he could not find it in himself to remain calm.

This was why even his right hand had come to a pause when he was about to place the crystal on the jade slip scroll, and even some of his presence spread out slightly, creating that feeling as if something was being held back in the tower.

Several breaths later, that feeling evaporated. Su Ming placed the crystal on the jade slip scroll and continued reading the scroll. After the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, he closed his eyes.

'Lie Shan Xiu...'

"Yu Chen Hai, didn't you mention that you wanted to look at the other family's auctions earlier?" Su Ming opened his eyes and turned his head to look at Yu Chen Hai, but when he looked over, he frowned, and a strange expression gradually crept up his face.

At that moment, Yu Chen Hai was looking at Yu Rou with a stupefied face. The besotted expression in his eyes could be felt clearly by all.

As for Yu Rou, she remained as calm as ever, as if she was completely not bothered by... how a member of the younger generation in her family was looking at her in such an infatuated manner.

Su Ming let out a dry cough, and Yu Chen Hai shuddered, snapping out of his daze. When he saw that Su Ming was looking at him, he instantly felt cold sweat drench his robes. His face turned pale. He could already imagine what would happen, and fear rose in his heart.

He did not know what had come over him. When the maidservant smiled at him, he had lost his senses and sank into that infatuated state. When he snapped out of it, intense fear immediately filled his heart. He was afraid that Su Ming would be displeased.

"Senior... I..." Yu Chen Hai was just about to explain as he was filled uneasiness.

Su Ming cut off Yu Chen Hai's explanations and asked faintly, "Does Lie Shan Family have an auction?"

"Lie Shan Family is a family that can host middle-sized auctions, and they host small auctions once every three days. There will be one today." Yu Chen Hai quickly nodded.

"Let's go. Lead the way, we'll go to Lie Shan Family's auction."

Su Ming stood up. When he spoke, he walked towards the entrance. The bald crane blinked and exchanged glances with the big yellow dog. They immediately moved at the same time and followed Su Ming.

Yu Rou stood up incredibly elegantly and put away the pot of wine, then sashayed behind Su Ming.

Yu Chen Hai let out a huge breath of relief in his heart at that moment and quickly followed after. He looked at Yu Rou's curvaceous body and suddenly remembered how rude he had been, though Su Ming did not seem to be bothered by it, and this maidservant who appeared out of nowhere also... did not seem to mind.

Yu Chen Hai looked as if he had been bewitched. His heart raced, but he did not dare think too much into it and simply followed Su Ming out of the house into the rain.

Chapter 881: Lie Shan's Fond Remembrance

During this season, even when it rained in Black Ink Planet, it was not cold. The raindrops that fell from the sky brought with them a hint of warmth, but when they landed on a person's body, they would inevitably make their clothes wet and cause them to stick to the skin, which brought great discomfort.

The oil-paper umbrellas in the rain looked like flowers. If anyone looked from the sky, they would not be able to see people, but feet under the umbrellas walking forward leisurely under the rain.

Su Ming had his hands placed behind his back. His long, gray hair danced in the air due to the wind blowing against it. By his side was the elegant Yu Rou. She held an umbrella in her hand and stuck close to him, as if she had truly become a maidservant.

Su Ming's long hair spilled down his shoulders as he walked in the rain. Some of them grazed Yu Rou's veil, as if they had fused with it to form a picture.

Behind them was the bald crane sitting on the big yellow dog. It let the rain fall on its body and had a contemptuous expression on its face, though no one knew just at whom that contempt was directed...

The big yellow dog continued regarding Yu Rou with hostility as it followed behind them in the rain.

Yu Chen Hai walked at the back.

The group walked out of Yu Family's gate, and a vast world revealed itself before them. This place was rather remote, since it was where the Yu Family was located. If the group wanted to head to the auction hall, they would need to go to Black Water City.

The entire Black Ink Planet was divided into multiple regions by the families. Some of them had complicated connections with other regions, but in an overall sense, there were three largest cities within the planet - Black Water, Ink Kirin, and Worldly Star. These cities were occupied by the three largest families in Black Ink Planet.

Due to the fame of the three cities, the cultivators and members of alien races in Divine Essence Star Ocean gathered there, and the distribution of certain benefits, smaller families had set up their own auction halls near the cities that were closest to where they stayed, though they needed to pay a certain amount of money to do so.

That was why some small auctions would be held near the three cities. Only some larger scale auctions would be built in different locations, away from the cities and within families' respective bases. The families would also only send out invitations in a wide scale for such auctions.

It was the case for Yu Family's auction hall, which was built in a huge natural basin eight thousand li away from Black Water City. Powerful warriors from the family would constantly be stationed there, keeping watch over the place. The hall was built in an incredibly extravagant manner, showing off the air of a middle-sized auction hall. The defense around it was tight, and it was built in a spot directly across Yu Family's base. If anything happened during the auction, they would be able to settle it instantly.

There were several tens of thousands of li from Yu Family's base to Black Water City. It might seem far, but to cultivators, this distance was nothing.

In fact, if they did not want to fly, they would also be able to use Relocation Runes to send a person straight to Black Water City.

Su Ming did not choose to use a Relocation Rune. He liked this rain. To him, this rain was real, and it was something he could have never seen before he came to Black Ink Planet.

The group turned into long arcs and slowly left into the distance amid the rain pouring down from the sky to the earth.

They continued traveling until a gigantic city appeared in the distance. That city looked rather strange. It had no walls and was a swamp that covered a large area.

The swamp was black, and there were wisps of freezing air spreading out from it, causing the rain to turn instantly into ice. When it fell in the water, an endless ripples were stirred.

There were multiple stone bridges built across the swamp. There were several intersection points, and each of them connected to several stone bridges at once. Usually, there would be a platform that was several hundreds of thousands of feet wide built on these intersection points, while some of them were even larger. Multiple towers and halls could be found on these platforms, and shops were located on them as well.

In fact, gigantic platforms that were more than one million feet wide could be found over some intersection points, formed from a dozen something stone bridges. They had carved railings, jade steps, and other sorts of ornaments that were so numerous they could not be counted.

This was Black Water City. It might also be raining in this place, but the rain could not conceal the bustle of activity. The silhouettes of cultivators could be seen everywhere.

The size of the city was big enough to accommodate millions of cultivators. The great size of the swamp could also be seen based on the size of the city itself. This was no longer a swamp, but a landmass big enough to be known as an open sea.

Yu Chen Hai took a few brisk steps forward to speak in a low tone behind Su Ming. "Mo, Tai Ci, and Hua are the three families in Black Ink Planet that are regarded as the leaders. They are the three strongest families, and only their families have the ability to build such a city.

"In fact, even the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean need to be courteous to the three families. Even the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping a lookout over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence need to come forth and pay their respects to the three families when coming here.

"Rumor has it... It's just a rumor, but it's said that the three great families can negotiate with the four Great True Worlds. They can send their family members out of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to train and gain experience in the four Great True Worlds."

The group descended from the sky and appeared outside Black Water City.

"The city was built by the Tai Ci Family, and it has a long history. There's a lot of legends surrounding the swamp. There're all sorts of fantastic records about it, and no one can tell whether they are true or false.

"However, there is a legend here which someone from the Yu Family has witnessed before. In the depths of the swamp lives an ancient beast that is extremely terrifying. That beast has nine heads... and once every ten thousand years, it lets out a roar, and that roar contains two words - Nine-headed Dragon ."

Su Ming's eyes focused, and he looked towards the swamp that belonged to Black Water City in the distance as he listened to Yu Chen Hai's words.

"Let's go. We'll take a look at Lie Shan Family's auction," Su Ming said flatly and walked over first.

Yu Rou had remained quiet all the way to this place. At that moment, she went after Su Ming to hold an umbrella over his head, walking onto a stone bridge.

There were no people acting as guards in the city, and there were plenty of stone bridges that acted as entrances in all directions. Anyone could come and go as they pleased. This lack of defensive measures in the city could only mean that Tai Ci Family, who controlled this city, had everything in their jurisdiction.

The big yellow dog would occasionally lower its head to look at the swamp, and a strange glint would flash in its eyes. After giving the swamp a careful sniff, it immediately put a distance between itself and the water. The bald crane, on the other hand, was completely unbothered by the swamp. At that moment, it had its head lowered and was fiddling with its claws, calculating something unbeknown to others.

Su Ming had a very relaxed expression on his face as he walked on the stone bridge and looked at the unique city before his eyes. Yu Rou quietly kept him company by his side. As they stepped into the city, they gradually saw quite a number of cultivators.

Yu Rou might have been wearing a veil over her face, but she still caused the cultivators to sneak peeks at her.

However, she seemed to already be used to being stared at and did not show any signs of discomfort, continuing to be like a maidservant beside Su Ming, which brought the gazes of the cultivators on him.

However, once they cast him a look, these cultivators immediately averted their gazes.

Su Ming's current appearance—which consisted of a maidservant, a big yellow dog, and a bald crane trailing behind him, as well as Yu Chen Hai by his side like a servant—made him look like a good-for-nothing young man from a wealthy family in everyone's eyes.

In fact, they did not even need to think about it to be able to tell that Su Ming was a direct descendant of some family who had come to Black Water City with his family servants. Most of the time, no one would intentionally provoke this sort of person.

As a member of the Yu Family, Yu Chen Hai was incredibly familiar with Black Water City. As he gave directions in a respectful manner, Su Ming walked past the stone bridges. Soon, he saw an intersection point between six stone bridges.

There was a gigantic platform there that was about thirty thousand something feet wide. An oval-shaped building was built on that platform, and it looked like a ring that was erected on the ground. There was a stone platform floating vertically in the empty portion at the center of the ring. That platform was shining.

There were numerous illusory threads around the platform, and they were swaying about in the wind. The threads might have seemed to be scattered, but if anyone took a closer look, they would immediately find that they formed three big words.

Lie Shan Family.

"This is Lie Shan Family's auction hall within Black Water City. The building might seem a little strange, but all of Lie Shan Family's auction halls are built this way. They aren't as beautiful as Yu Family's auction halls," Yu Chen Hai whispered softly.

Su Ming was silent. As he looked at the gigantic ring-shaped building, a complicated expression gradually appeared on his face. No one else might be able to see any form of aesthetic in the ring-shaped building, but at the instant Su Ming saw the building, ripples rose in his heart.

On the ring, Su Ming saw various hollows and bumps. There were also a large amount of horizontal and perpendicular lines on it. This... was not a building. It was clearly... a map of the land of Berserkers!

The hollowed parts were basins, the bumps were plateaus, and the horizontal as well as perpendicular lines marked the rise and fall of mountain ranges. The empty portion at the center of the ring... was the Dead Sea!

The stone platform at the empty space was once the core of the land of Berserkers, where Great Yu Dynasty was built. This was a complete map of the land of Berserkers, and this building was the epitome of Lie Shan Xiu's fond remembrance of his home.

Perhaps he thought that other people would not be able to understand this form of yearning and remembrance, which was why he had fused these feelings into the buildings that belonged to the Lie Shan Family. He also probably did not expect... that there would be someone who would be able to see his thoughts from these buildings.

However, Su Ming could tell. He looked at the ring-shaped building with a dazed expression, then at the illusory threads around the area. They numbered a thousand, not a single more, and not a single less, just like the number of blood veins within a Berserker's body. It was the initiation for the Berserkers' cultivation method and their foundation.

The four words formed by the blood veins was not some sort of divine ability in Su Ming's eyes, but the Berserkers' Berserker Mark!

A Berserker Mark formed of one thousand blood veins!

"He misses home..." Su Ming mumbled. He could sense Lie Shan Xiu's longing for his home from the ring-shaped building.

He looked at it quietly, all sound having vanished from his ears. The world before his eyes had blurred. The only thing that remained was the ring-shaped building.

'The land of Berserkers was torn to pieces during the second God of Berserkers' era. During the first God of Berserkers' era, it was whole. I originally thought that it was a massive piece of land, but by the looks of it now, this... is how the land of Berserkers looked like during the first God of Berserkers' time.

'It might have changed a lot later on... but I can still see some traces of the land I'm familiar with ... That part is... the ninth summit, and that part... is Dark Mountain...' Su Ming sighed softly.

"Come, let's go in," he said softly, leading his group inside.

As the group headed in, several cultivators immediately walked out of the auction hall. The auction had already started. If they did not have a special token, they would not be able to enter the place halfway through.

However, as a member of the Yu Family, if Yu Chen Hai could bring Su Ming to this place, then he would naturally have a method to get in. Once he brought out a plate, the cultivators immediately made way. A hearty laugh came from inside the building.

"So it's brother Chen Hai? Come in, quickly."

Appearing with that laughter was an incredibly big and tall man, who seemed to be in his thirties. He had thick brows and big eyes, which made him look incredibly boorish. Compared to the slender figure shared by the average cultivator, he looked incredibly brawny.

1. Oil-paper umbrellas: Umbrellas made of paper, mainly used to provide shade and as bridal gifts. The color of the umbrellas have their own meanings. Purple is for longevity, and white is for funerals. You can read more about them here: <http://www.umbrellahistory.net/umbrella-types/oil-paper-umbrellas/>

2. Nine-headed Dragon: The dragon that was in Han Mountain Bell, which Su Ming obtained from Han Mountain City and whose only six heads did he manage to wake.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 882: Trouble Stirs in the Auction - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 882: Trouble Stirs in the Auction

Chapter 882: Trouble Stirs in the Auction

"Brother Kang Jiu, I've come to bother you again. I was slightly delayed during my trip here, that's why I'm late. I hope that you won't mind." Yu Chen Hai laughed and wrapped his fist in his palm as a greeting to the man who was walking over to him.

"It's fine. Your presence here adds a sparkle to this place. And who might this be?" The man's laughter was very hearty, but even though he looked boorish, he was incredibly cautious. With a change of topic, he looked towards Su Ming.

When he looked at the other, his expression remained the same, but he was discreetly vigilant. From the positions of everyone in the group, he could immediately tell that Su Ming was clearly the leader there.

Besides, the covered Yu Rou standing beside Su Ming also caused the man to be curious about the other's identity.

"Senior Su is a guest of Yu Family. Brother Kang Jiu, you know as well that I will be hosting an auction for the first time in a few days, that's why I came with Senior Su to observe and learn. If we find anything we fancy, I do hope that you will give us a bit of a leeway," Yu Chen Hai said with a smile.

"A guest of the Yu Family? I, Lie Shan Kang Jiu, greet Senior Su." The man's expression immediately turned respectful, and he took two steps backwards to wrap his fist in his palm to bow towards Su Ming. His expression was incredibly sincere.

Su Ming looked at the man before him. His brawny stature would make him stick out like a sore thumb in other people's eyes, but to Su Ming, he could not help but find the man a familiar sight. This was the physique of a Berserker. This was the rough look that belonged to those who had Berserker blood flowing in their veins.

'He surpassed Berserker Soul Realm...'

Su Ming could tell with just one glance that the man had already reached the middle stage of World Plane Realm, but he did not practice the cultivation methods of a cultivator. Instead... he practiced Berserker Arts because of which he was filled with a vast amount of Qi.

In fact, Su Ming could even see about nine hundred something blood veins hidden in the man's body. His Berserker Mark was also concealed under his skin. All other people would not be able to see it, but for Su Ming, everything about the man was in clear sight.

'He uses fire as a theme for his Mark.'

Su Ming averted his gaze and thought in his heart. He might not have said anything, but when he looked over just now, Lie Shan Kang Jiu's heart had trembled furiously. His expression instantly changed drastically, and shock as well as astonishment appeared in his eyes. Back then, because of that one glance, he had a feeling as if he stood before Su Ming naked, and every single of his secrets had been discovered.

However, this was not what had delivered the greatest shock to him. What had caused him to be in slight disbelief was that when Su Ming looked at him, he lost control over the blood veins in his body; it felt as if they were about to burst forth from within him. The Berserker Mark he concealed also started showing signs that it was about to surface on his skin.

When Su Ming looked over, Lie Shan Kang Jiu even felt his breathing still and his body start trembling faintly, as if his blood was boiling and he wanted to worship the other. He had only felt something like this... once before.

It was when he met the Progenitor of the family. When the Progenitor had looked at him, a loud bang had rung out in his head.

"You are very good," Su Ming said calmly. There was no underlying meaning to his words, but as he spoke, an awe-inspiring and ancient air was naturally contained in his voice, like the tone that would be used by one of those in the older generation when he looked at a promising member of the younger generation.

After all... he was the God of Berserkers!

He was the God of all those who had Berserker blood flowing in their veins.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu instinctively lowered his head and could not help but feel reverent. However, he soon registered what was going on and his heart immediately started trembling furiously. He did not dare to look into Su Ming's eyes.

"Come, let us go see the first's... auction hall." Su Ming smiled in delight and walked before the group.

Neither Yu Chen Hai nor Lie Shan Kang Jiu understood what he meant by the first, but they instinctively followed behind him, especially Lie Shan Kang Jiu. When he looked at Su Ming, his gaze was filled with awe and veneration. He was very courteous all along the way as he led them into the auction hall.

"Senior Su, there is a ring-shaped hall in Lie Shan Family's auction hall, and each family that takes part in it will have their own respective rooms in the hall. This is Yu Family's room." Soon, Lie Shan Kang Jiu brought Su Ming and the others before a room while speaking respectfully.

Su Ming did not look at Yu Family's room, but instead lifted his head to look at another room in the distance.

"Change to that room."

Lie Shan Kang Jiu looked in the direction Su Ming was looking, and a troubled look immediately appeared on his face.

"Senior, that is Lie Shan Family's room, and no outsiders are allowed. This is..."

"Can we?" Su Ming turned his head around and cast Lie Shan Kang Jiu a flat gaze.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu instinctively lowered his head, and after a brief period of silence, he smiled wryly and nodded in agreement. There was a great wave stirring in his heart at that moment, because he discovered that when Su Ming asked that question... he could not refuse him. It was as if there was a form of suppression from his blood to his soul, because of which he was unable to be as free with his movements as before he met Su Ming.

This was due to a form of reservation on his part and a form of majesty on Su Ming's part. This had nothing to do with Su Ming's level of cultivation, because as one of the managers of the auction hall in this place, Lie Shan Kang Jiu had received some old monsters in Solar Kalpa Realm before. He might have been nervous back then, but even then, he did not experience such complete suppression as he did now. In fact, his heart, his blood, and even his soul were subconsciously wanting to obey Su Ming, to not go against his words.

'Just... who is he?' This was the biggest question in Lie Shan Kang Jiu's heart at that moment.

Once he nodded with a wry smile, Su Ming walked towards the room he chose. Yu Chen Hai quickly went forward to push open the door, revealing a large room. The decor might have been simple, but it gave off a grand presence. The walls in the room were all illusions, and with just one glance, they were able to see a big hall outside filled with thousands of people creating a clamor with their discussions.

At the center was a platform, and on it was a cultivator in his forties. He was introducing the item put up for bidding to the crowd with a smile on his face.

Su Ming stood by that illusory wall and looked at the bustle of activity outside without saying a single word. He had chosen this room because when he saw the map of the land of Berserkers outside on the ring-shaped building just now, he had discovered that the ninth summit was located in this spot.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu cast a wary look at Su Ming's back, then wrapped his fist in his palm towards Yu Chen Hai to bid farewell before he left. Once he did so, his expression immediately changed and he hurried to where his family members were.

'That young man called Su Ming is incredibly strange. I'll have to report this to the family as soon as possible. That person... is an enigma. He actually nearly caused me to expose myself as a Berserker!'

Once Lie Shan Kang Jiu left, Yu Chen Hai stood respectfully by the side of the room near Su Ming. When he looked at him, the reverence in his eyes was even stronger. He had naturally seen the changes in Lie Shan Kang Jiu's attitude, and all of this was because of Su Ming. Needless to say, Yu Chen Hai formed many speculations in his heart.

Yu Rou remained as elegant as ever. She stood by Su Ming's side and looked at the bustling auction hall without saying a thing.

The bald crane completely ignored Su Ming and the rest. It was staring straight at the big yellow dog with a look of great interest.

Once the dog entered the room, it shook its body, and raindrops flew all over the place. For some unknown reason, when the bald crane saw this, it felt that the dog looked very mighty while doing it.

Which was why once the yellow dog finished shaking off all the water droplets on its body, a dark light swiftly shone on the bald crane's body and it gained the form of a big black dog which started shaking its body like the yellow dog had done moments ago.

Half of the auction had passed by then, and the climax arrived. Thousands of people might not seem like a huge number—and this was just a small auction—but in truth, if anyone looked over at that moment, they would find that the auction was filled with hordes of people.

"I will spare you hearing my voice now. My fellow Daoists, these three pieces of wood are three logs of Ash Pine Wood from Divine Essence Star Ocean. The minimum bid is 100,000 crystals!"

The middle-aged man swung his arm with a smile, and immediately, the air behind him distorted. Three women walked out. They were all rather beautiful, and each of them balanced a blue tray on their hands. There was a white log which was the breadth of a finger on each of the trays.

Waves of ancient presence spread out from the three logs, and those ancient presences were incredibly dense. However, they did not give off a feeling of degeneration. Instead, there was an abundance of life force contained within them.

"130,000!"

"170,000!"

"200,000! Those three logs of Ash Pine Wood are mine!"

"Not necessarily. Ash Pine Wood can cause a woman's face to not age for three hundred years. This treasure is useful for me. I'll offer 300,000 for them."

Voices continued rising and falling as they placed their bids, and soon, the bid exceeded 500,000 crystals. Su Ming looked at the fervent ardor in the auction hall, but there was not a single change on his face.

"Only Lie Shan Family is able to bring out Ash Pine Wood in this sort of small auction. Almost all of the Ash Pine Wood put up for bidding in Black Ink Planet comes from Lie Shan Family," Yu Chen Hai mumbled under his breath by the side.

"What are the effects of that wood?" Su Ming asked faintly.

"Senior Su, that wood doesn't possess any special effects. It can only let a woman moisturize and nourish her face," Yu Chen Hai quickly said.

"Ash Pine Wood can provide nourishment for the face. If someone refined it and absorbed it, they would be able to extract the power of time in it. If they fused it into their Enchanted Vessels, they would be able to nourish their Vessel Spirits, and if they merged it with their bodies, they could fill their bodies with life force, but this doesn't have any healing properties.

"If a person is in possession of a large amount of Ash Pine Wood, they would be able to create the Bygone Time Venom. This poison can cause a person to age rapidly, and it cannot be cured," Yu Rou explained calmly.

When she said all that, Yu Chen Hai was momentarily stunned. He had never heard of Ash Pine Wood possessing these effects before, and while he had heard of Bygone Time Venom, he only knew that it was a poison sold at an incredibly appalling price. He did not expect that it was created from Ash Pine Wood.

When Yu Rou spoke, the three logs of Ash Pine Wood were sold to someone for an incredibly high price. The host of Lie Shan Family spoke up once more then.

"The universe is filled with strange things, and bizarre objects are born within the universe. This time, we of Lie Shan Family have been entrusted with a task by a mysterious person, and we will auction off an item that is unique and one of its kind in the world. It has been brought out from the depths of Divine Essence Star Ocean, a region that practically no cultivator can venture into!

"This item would normally not appear here and would only be put up for bidding in our family's large auction, but the mysterious person was anxious to have it sold, which was why it has come here.

"I will not waste your time now. The starting bid for this item is... 1,000,000 crystals!"

As his voice echoed in the air, the auction hall fell silent because right before everyone's eyes, an old man walked out from the air behind the host of Lie Shan Family.

That old man had an incredibly big frame. When he walked out, the ground looked as if it trembled. He had no expression on his face, and once he appeared, he instantly swung his arm. Immediately, a statue of about thirty feet tall appeared in front of him. That statue had two heads: One of them was crying, while the other was smiling. There was damage all over its body, and it looked incredibly old.

There was also no life force about it, which made it clear that it was a dead object. By the looks of it, it also seemed to be in a state between being an illusion and being something that had corporeal form, since it appeared to be slightly blurry.

Su Ming's pupils constricted.

Chapter 883: Elder Feng

"That old man is Lie Shan Family's guest, Guru Song Qing!"

"Why is he here in a small auction?"

"That's right. It's really that old monster personally keeping watch over this mysterious item. That old monster Song Qing has been Lie Shan Family's guest for many years. His level of cultivation remains a mystery, and his Sealing Art is incredibly shocking.

"It's said that someone from Tai Ci Family was once willing to pay an incredible price to invite him over from Lie Shan Family so he would become Tai Ci Family's guest, but the offer was respectfully declined."

In the mid of all the discussions that stirred up in the auction hall due to the old man's appearance, the old man with the big frame lifted his head and cast a cold glance at the entire hall, then lifted his right hand to point at the broken statue that was floating in front of him.

"Since most of you know me and we can be considered friends, then allow me to give all of you a word of warning. If you... don't know what this is, then don't recklessly place a bid." The old Song Qing only said those words before he shut his mouth and stood by the side like a small hill.

However, if he had not said them, this statue's appearance would not have brought about too much attention. But now that he said them, all the people in the auction hall instantly focused their gazes on the statue.

"Just what is that thing?"

"Could it be a statue of an ancient God?!"

"That's not right. I can't feel that sort of ancient presence from it, but I can't place the one that's coming out, either."

"How dare they put the starting bid at 1,000,000 crystals for this sort of statue?! It's absolutely not worth it!"

The discussions instantly rose in a loud buzz within the auction hall. In fact, there were even a few skeptical voices questioning the value of the statue in piercing shouts in this place filled with thousands of people, which resulted in a quite chaotic atmosphere.

"I can't tell whether this item is valuable or not. If any of you know this item, then you will choose to buy it even if you use up tens of millions of crystals. If you don't, then you might not even fish out a single crystal from your pocket. That is why you may all start bidding now."

The host from the Lie Shan Family had a relaxed expression on his face. As he spoke with a smile, the auction hall gradually fell silent, but no one placed a bid.

Su Ming stood by the illusory wall in the room while looking at the statue with a dumbfounded gaze. He did not know whether other people would be able to recognize this thing, but with just one glance, he could tell just what it was.

The ancient presence on it was a Berserker's presence. That statue was clearly a statue of the God of Berserkers!

"Lie Shan Family will always bring out some really strange items. Just what is that thing?" Yu Chen Hai looked at the statue by the side with a frown on his face. Even Yu Rou was observing it carefully at that moment, but after a long time passed, she found that she could not recognize it.

"This item isn't bad. I might not be able to recognize it, but I'll put it as a decoration in my house and admire it. 1,000,000 crystals." After remaining silent for a moment, a hoarse voice spoke from within the auction hall.

The voice did not come from the hall where the thousands of cultivators were gathered, but came from the rooms that were similar to the one in which Su Ming stayed. Once that voice spoke, it immediately caught the attention of the cultivators in the hall.

"1,300,000 crystals. After all, I do like collecting strange items." Soon after, another voice resounded in the air.

"1,600,000 crystals!"

"1,800,000 crystals!"

Soon, another voice joined in the auction. As the three people competed for the item, all the cultivators in the auction hall immediately became excited, even if they didn't know what that item was. The three voices all came from the rooms that belonged to honored guests as well. All those who could come into possession of a room in an auction hall belonged to the members of the families within Black Ink Planet, unlike the rogue cultivators who were mostly from Black Ink Planet gathered in the hall, or some outsiders.

There was a secret chamber within Lie Shan Family's auction hall. As these people continued competing against each other, an old man could be found sitting cross-legged in there. Behind him were a dozen something men who could clearly be seen as members of the Lie Shan Family based on their physique, and they were all standing respectfully behind him.

Needless to say, one of them was Lie Shan Kang Jiu.

All of them did not speak but were looking at an illusory screen of light before the old man. It was the projection of the entire auction hall, and even the voices from the hall came from the screen.

The old man had a head full of white hair. He wore a long, purplish blue robe, and his face was filled with wrinkles. He sat in the room quietly and looked at the screen in front of him. There was a waning presence spreading out from his body, as if he was already incredibly old.

Faint distortions could be detected in the space around him. In the mid of them, the destruction and reassembly of space went on continuously. In fact, if anyone took a closer look, they would be able to find that the reason for this... was the wind!

There was a layer of invisible wind around the old man, and it was swirling about him without stop.

"Elder Feng, we've put the statue of the God of Berserkers up for bidding as according to your orders."

The space behind the old man swayed as if it was about to be torn apart, and a man walked out from within. That man looked to be in his fifties, and there was a thick murderous aura surrounding him. He took big strides forward and wrapped his fist in his palm respectfully towards the old man when he was by his side.

The old man nodded. He had his eyes fixed on the auction hall, as if he was waiting for something.

After a long while, when the bid for the statue in the auction hall had reached 4,000,000 something crystals, the person the old man waited for still did not mention anything about wanting to buy the statue.

"Kang Jiu..." The old man's voice was ancient. There was a uniquely hoarse quality to it, and even an accent that was different from those in Black Ink Planet.

"Elder Feng." Lie Shan Kang Jiu immediately walked forth and bowed deeply towards the old man with an incredibly respectful expression. His respect came from how this old man had contributed to the family over the course of numerous years, because of which his position was incredibly high in the family, just right under the Progenitor. Some of the legends surrounding this old man also caused the family members to hold great respect towards him.

"Tell me what you felt in detail during that time," the old man muttered softly.

"Understood!" Lie Shan Kang Jiu sucked in a deep breath and spoke in a low voice. "When I was before him, I had the false impression as if I was standing before the Progenitor. I seemed to have lost control over the blood veins in my body, and even the Berserker Mark nearly showed up on my skin. What was more, when I was before him, I had the intention to worship him. This intention seemed to have come from my soul, as if..." Lie Shan Kang Jiu paused for a moment.

"As if?" The old man turned his head around and looked at Lie Shan Kang Jiu. When he did so, wind immediately appeared out of nowhere around Lie Shan Kang Jiu.

"It was as if... I do not know how to describe it either. It was as if I did not want to go against his orders, and I had to believe in his words without ever doubting." Lie Shan Kang Jiu lowered his head with a wry smile. The dozen something members of the Lie Shan Family behind him immediately sported solemn expressions on their faces.

The old man fell silent, then turned his head around to continue watching everything happening in the auction hall. He mumbled quietly in his heart, 'Are you someone from our homeland...? Then you must definitely be able to recognize the statue of the God of Berserkers.

'If you are, then all is well. If you aren't but have practiced a cultivation method that can suppress the Berserkers, then... forget the fact that you are just a guest in the Yu Family. Even if you are one of the Progenitors who have recently been freed in the Yu Family, or the Apostle of the Sun God and Moon Goddess, or even a member of the three great families protected by those old coots, you will definitely die in Black Ink Planet!

'There is nothing Lie Shan Family cannot do in this planet!' The old man narrowed his eyes, and a spark of killing intent shone in them. If anyone knew of what he was thinking at that moment, they would surely be incredibly shocked.

He clearly knew about everything that had happened in the Yu Family, even though this was the greatest secret in the Yu Family. Even most of the family members did not know about this, but the old man clearly knew about it in great detail.

The words in his heart also made it seem as if he thought nothing of the three great families. Then... was the Lie Shan Family... which was regarded as a middle-tier family in the eyes of the cultivators in Black Ink Planet... really just a middle-tier family...?

When the old man fell into a pensive silence, the auction hall in the illusory screen of light suddenly fell silent.

"My young master wants this statue." An incredibly pleasant voice echoed in the auction hall, and a woman walked out from one of the upper rooms that belonged to the various families in the planet.

The woman wore a veil over her face, but even so, she still had an incredible beauty about her that could cause hearts to pound in excitement. As she walked out, the area instantly turned silent. However, numerous gazes immediately gathered on her body.

"6,000,000 crystals. Bundle it up properly and give it to me."

Naturally, that beautiful woman was Yu Rou. She had an elegant and quiet expression on her face. When she walked onto the platform, a storage bag appeared on her hand. She pushed it forward gently, and the storage bag immediately charged towards the host from Lie Shan Family.

The member of the Lie Shan Family hosting the auction was momentarily stunned. Once he held the storage bag in hand, he instinctively cast a glance at the guest of his family, Guru Song Qing. Song Qing's expression was incredibly grave at that moment as he stared at the woman.

"This is..." The man from the Lie Shan Family hesitated for a moment. During that instant, a lackadaisical voice came from a room that belonged to another family of the upper levels. There was even a teasing tone in that voice.

"Girl, I'll be buying it for 7,000,000 crystals."

"8,000,000 crystals," Yu Rou said softly without even lifting her head.

"Haha! Very well, then I'll buy it for 9,000,000." There was laughter contained in that lackadaisical voice, but within it was a hint of lust as it echoed leisurely in the air.

Once that bid was placed, the cultivators in the auction hall immediately put on expressions as if they were watching something entertaining. Occasionally, someone would lift their heads to look at the room where the man's voice came from, but every single one of them who looked would immediately find their expressions changing before they lowered their heads.

"There are very few people who dare to compete against me, Tai Ci Yong, in Black Water City. Not bad, girl. I'll offer up 10,000,000 crystals, but I'll give you one more chance. If you offer 15,000,000 crystals, then I won't compete against you anymore." The chuckles from the lackadaisical voice echoed in the air.

The answer to his challenge was Yu Rou speaking in her gentle voice that now had a bitingly cold lilt to it, and she did not even lift her head, as if she was completely ignoring him. "20,000,000 crystals."

Once that bid was placed, the auction hall became abuzz with speakers.

"Very well, I'll let your master have that statue. The price is 20,000,000 crystals and you. Bring me the crystals and the girl, I'll have a taste of her in this place." As his laughter echoed in the air, piercing whistles came from a room in the upper levels. Two figures shot out and charged straight towards Yu Rou.

Chapter 884: I Want to See Lie Shan Xiu

Su Ming stood by the illusory wall in his room. He only needed to take one step to move out of the room and enter the big hall in the auction hall. Yu Rou had walked out of it like that previously.

He looked at the storm in the hall, looked at Yu Rou placing the bids, listened to the lackadaisical voice teasing her, and even saw the two figures that flew out from the man's voice.

All of this was only because of one single sentence he had uttered just now.

"I want that statue."

Chaos might have risen in the auction hall, but Su Ming continued standing in the room and watching everything outside.

The two figures closed in on Yu Rou in the auction hall. A vast amount of power erupted with a bang from their bodies. It was a power that belonged to those in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and they were closing in on Yu Rou like two crazed dragons tearing apart space.

Judging by their presence, it seemed that capturing Yu Rou alive was an incredibly easy matter for them. After all, in their perception, Yu Rou was only in the initial stage of World Plane Realm.

Yu Chen Hai's expression changed as he stood beside Su Ming. He wanted to help, but when he saw that there was not a single hint of change on Su Ming's face, he hesitated for a moment before he gritted his teeth and rushed out of the wall.

Yu Chen Hai had quite a large number of people who were close to him in Black Ink Planet due to his status in the Yu Family and due to him having a friendly personality. As he appeared, some people in the crowd in the area immediately recognized him.

"It's Yu Chen Hai."

"So she's a member of the Yu Family. This will be interesting. That's quite a pretty girl, so she must definitely be Yu Chen Hai's maidservant, but aren't they being stupid? How could they provoke someone from the Tai Ci Family?"

"The difference between a middle-tier family and one of the greatest families in Black Ink Planet is like heaven and earth. Yu Chen Hai should not have appeared. Ha... lust clouds judgment. This saying is true indeed."

Boom!

A loud bang immediately reverberated in Lie Shan Family's auction hall before turning into an endless amount of echoes that continuously shook the auction hall, turning those who heard deaf for a moment. In the mid of those echoes, the people in the area quickly dispersed. In the process, they discovered to their shock that the two cultivators who had rushed towards Yu Rou had coughed up blood at the same time due to some unknown reason. They fell back swiftly and crashed straight into a wall by the side. They had blood pouring out from their eyes, nose, ears, and mouth, and they looked incredibly pathetic. Their expressions were also filled with fear and disbelief.

In fact, even Yu Chen Hai, who had wanted to help, went wide-eyed in disbelief in midair. He saw Yu Rou standing elegantly on the platform and slowly putting down her hand, which she had lifted previously.

She had clearly just lifted her arm and swung it, but this alone had caused the two cultivators in the middle stage of World Plane Realm cough up blood and fall backwards with severe injuries.

A ripple of power that belonged to those in the later stage of World Plane Realm faintly spread out from her body, turning into a mighty pressure. Under this pressure, the people around found their breathing coming to a halt, and it was especially so for the two cultivators from the Tai Ci Family. Their bodies were fixed on the wall under that pressure; they could not free themselves from it.

Silence instantly fell upon the area. This scene surpassed all their expectations.

Yu Rou lifted her head and looked calmly towards the illusory wall of the room where Su Ming was. He met her gaze behind that wall.

"Kill them," he said flatly. His voice came through the wall and echoed in the auction hall.

Only at that instant did the thousands of cultivators in the auction realized that Yu Chen Hai was not the person-in-charge and neither was he the master of that beautiful woman. The young master the woman had spoken of... was the person who spoke just then!

At the instant Su Ming said those words, Yu Rou hesitated for a moment, but she immediately forced down her doubts and lifted her right hand to point at the two cultivators. At that moment, a low roar came from the room that belonged to the Tai Ci Family.

"How dare you kill Tai Ci Family's guards in Black Water City?!"

Along with the voice came an old man that looked like a fierce tiger. He moved out of the room that belonged to Tai Ci Family with a single step, and once he appeared, he lifted his right foot and stomped on the air.

With a bang, the two cultivators who were fixed to the wall immediately shuddered. Once their freedom was restored, they charged towards the old man with pale faces.

"Tai Ci Family's guest, Yun Long Hu!"

"It's him, Yun Long Hu, cultivator at the later stage of World Plane Realm!"

Someone from among the cultivators in the area immediately recognized the old man. However, all of this were happening at lightning speed. Right at the instant the two Tai Ci Family cultivators who had been freed from being fixed to the wall took a step forward, a dark light in the shape of a crescent moon instantly shone by their side. They could only see a figure that was caught somewhere in between the state of possessing corporeal form and being an illusion passing by their bodies, and two shrill screams of pain instantly reverberated in the area.

Amid those screams, the two people's heads were separated from their bodies. Their souls and their Nascent Divinities were crushed, and their forms as well as their spirits were destroyed.

The expression of the old man from Tai Ci Family changed. As his pupils shrank, a blurry figure appeared in midair just beyond the room that belonged to Su Ming. That

figure was bald and had a black cloak covering his body. A ferocious totem shone on his scalp. This person was... the Duke of Crimson Flame!

This was the first time the Duke of Crimson Flame executed his full power before Su Ming. He did not want to use this sort of power too often, and in fact, when Su Ming had ran into danger in the past, he only took him and shifted into another area. He did not attack.

However, once Su Ming obtained his Ecang clone, the Duke of Crimson Flame had truly acknowledged him, and his opinion about him changed as well.

"If my master says they must die, then they must die," the Duke of Crimson Flame said in a fierce and brutal tone. His voice was hoarse, and there was a bloodthirsty, murderous air to his words, showing off his attitude of a powerful warrior in a domineering manner.

The old guest from Tai Ci Family, Yun Long Hu, let out a cold harrumph with a dark expression on his face. This was Black Water City, and Tai Ci Family was in complete control of the place. No matter how many powerful warriors there were, he was not afraid.

In fact, that lackadaisical voice from the room behind him spoke up once again in a leisurely manner.

"How very exciting. Since when did the Yu Family become so bold?"

As the person spoke, four people walked out of the room. The person in the lead was a young man dressed in Hanfu. He held a fan in his hand, and once he strode out of his room, a chilling look shone in his eyes, but when he looked towards Yu Rou, it turned into lust.

The three old men behind him had apathetic expressions on their faces. Their eyes were shut tight, as if they were puppets.

When the young man spoke, he shifted his gaze away from Yu Rou and looked towards the wall of Su Ming's room. He could not see the other, but Su Ming could see him.

"You killed the guards of Tai Ci Family, Yu Family. You will answer for this. Three days later, I want your auction hall." The young man smiled faintly and tapped the fan on his left hand, then turned around as if he wanted to leave.

Su Ming cast a glance at the young man turning away to leave behind the illusory wall, and a faint smile suddenly appeared on his face.

'Lie Shan Family, since you brought out a statue of the God of Berserkers to test me, then I will test all of you... on whether you still have the Berserkers in your heart!'

"Kill these people." His voice was incredibly indifferent. However, once it came through the wall, loud booming sounds rose in the hearts of all those who heard it.

Even the young man turned around swiftly, and a powerful, chilly look appeared in his eyes.

The three old men who had their eyes closed behind him opened their eyes at the same time. At that moment, the first to move was the Duke of Crimson Flame. As he laughed ferociously, he moved forward.

Yu Rou immediately followed. Her expression remained elegant; however, she did frown slightly. Yet even though she did that, she moved her body and charged towards the young man.

Killing intent filled the young man's eyes, but he moved swiftly backwards. Yun Long Hu let out a low growl by his side and charged towards the incoming Duke of Crimson Flame. As for the three old men who opened their eyes, one of them blocked off Yu Rou's path, and one of them closed in on Yu Chen Hai, who was shocked by how the events had unfolded. The remaining person... moved and charged towards the wall of the room in which Su Ming stayed, rushing straight in.

Loud voices rose in the area. The auction today had come to a complete halt by then. The fight between the Yu Family and Tai Ci Family had become the most important thing at that moment.

The cultivators retreated swiftly, not wanting to be involved in this. In fact, some of them had even swiftly decided to leave the auction hall, but when they were withdrawing, they discovered that the exits had been sealed off by a screen of light; they could not leave.

In fact, some of the more intelligent ones had long since noticed that even though such a thing had happened in the auction hall, not a single member of the Lie Shan Family had appeared. Even the host had vanished, and Guru Song Qing was nowhere to be found as well.

This was an incredibly strange matter. After all, usually, once a battle of Arts happened in an auction hall, the family that owned that particular place would immediately appear to stop the fight and talk things over with both parties in order to resolve the matter.

As the people in the area were shocked, the booming sounds grew so loud that even the auction hall started trembling because of it. The old man that had rushed into Su Ming's room beforehand tumbled out of the wall. As blood poured out from his body, it was swiftly crushed right before everyone's eyes. Fear appeared on his face as he stared fixedly at a person who walked out of the wall at that moment.

He had long gray hair, long white robes, and a calm expression. With an indescribable mighty pressure surrounding him, he walked out of the wall, and he... was naturally Su Ming!

There were two large dogs by his side. One of them was yellow, and the other black. The big yellow dog was baring its teeth and growling. As for the big black dog by the side, once it noticed the yellow dog's actions, it imitated them and also started baring its teeth and growling, putting up an appearance that screamed 'I-am-very-fierce-and-seriously-very-powerful'.

Su Ming walked languidly. His appearance immediately caused almost everyone in the area to train their eyes on him. He did not look at the young man and neither did he look at anyone else. Instead, he lifted his head and looked at the area above the auction hall with a faint smile on his lips.

His smile appeared on the illusory screen of light for the dozen something members of the Lie Shan Family to see. They looked at him, and even had the feeling that he was also looking at them.

Elder Feng looked at Su Ming on the screen of light and slowly furrowed his brows. A look of uncertainty flashed in his eyes.

"I want to see Lie Shan Xiu," Su Ming said through the screen of light, his voice echoing in the ears of Lie Shan Family.

Chapter 885: Elder Feng's Joy

The expressions of the members of the Lie Shan Family within the chamber differed in regards to Su Ming's voice. Some of them narrowed their eyes, some of them had dubious looks on their faces, and some of them put on scornful expressions.

Lie Shan Xiu was the supreme Progenitor of Lie Shan Family. Forget outsiders, most of the members of the family had never seen his face before. And even if they had, it was only from afar, for it was rare for any of them to be summoned individually.

Right then, to most of the family members, the act of this person with an unknown identity making this request made him seem a little too arrogant and conceited.

However, while the family members harbored different thoughts in their hearts, they did not show it on their faces. At that moment, Elder Feng shook his head before them.

"What a spirited young fellow." Elder Feng's furrowed brows gradually smoothed out. The uncertain look in his eyes remained, but there was a smile on his face.

He looked at Su Ming, and the smile on his face was one full of joy and delight, like the feeling that would come straight from a member of the older generation's heart when he saw a promising member of the younger generation.

As for his act of shaking his head, it was akin to an affable show of forbearance towards that particular member of the younger generation born out of a form of affection.

In fact, that smile continued growing wider, until Elder Feng eventually started laughing loudly. This joy had not been felt by him for tens of thousands of years. His laughter was hearty, and the members of the Lie Shan Family looked at each other while at a loss as to what to do.

"This young fellow is slightly mischievous. Still, how dare a mere member of the Tai Ci Family provoke my scion?" As Elder Feng mumbled under his breath, a domineering presence that looked down on the entire world spread out from his body.

The members of the Lie Shan Family behind him immediately felt fear and lowered their heads, not saying a single word. They had never seen Elder Feng, who had an incredibly high status in the Lie Shan Family, laugh in such a delighted manner before. In their memories, while Feng Lai did not have Lie Shan in his name, he was one of the four great generals of their Progenitor, Lie Shan Xiu.

He had followed Lie Shan Progenitor for many years, and they were so close that Elder Feng was like their Progenitor's right hand. Elder Feng was an incredibly stern person. There was also a sort of pride in his heart. He had been in the Lie Shan Family for many years and had an incredibly high status, but he never had a lover, and neither did he have any children. He spent his days in quiet isolation, and he did not even have any disciples.

There was once an older member of the family who pleaded to meet Elder Feng and begged him to take in some children who showed great potential as his disciples, but all of them were rejected by Elder Feng. He had once uttered a single sentence when he rejected them, and that sentence gradually spread through the entire Lie Shan Family. Then, as time went by, no one came forth to ask Elder Feng to take in disciples anymore.

"I have a disciple. I might not know who this disciple of mine is and I might have never seen them before, but I will have a disciple and will have a scion who will inherit my legacy. This person will be my only disciple.

"Perhaps I might never be able to see this disciple of mine... but I will only take in this one disciple in my life."

As he laughed, his mutters were naturally not heard by the members of the Lie Shan Family standing behind him. He watched the chaos in the auction hall from the screen of light where Yu Rou, the Duke of Crimson Flame, and Yu Chen Hai fought against the

cultivators from the Tai Ci Family. The booming sounds from their battle of Arts reverberated in the air.

However, this was, after all, Lie Shan Family's auction hall. The growth of the family for tens of thousands of years had caused the members of the Lie Shan Family to not all be like Lie Shan Kang Jiu. When the family grew in number, parts of it would form their own connections and acquaintances. Among the members of the Lie Shan Family standing behind Elder Feng was one of these people, and he was an old man who had a very close relationship with the Tai Ci Family.

The old man hesitated for a moment before he took a step forward, then wrapped his fist in his palm and spoke respectfully.

"Elder Feng, should... should we stop both parties from attacking each other?"

"Hmm?" The smile on Elder Feng's face instantly disappeared, and the chilly expression returned once again. He did not even bother turning his head around.

However, that one single sound was like a gust of freezing wind that blew on the old man's body, and he trembled instantly. He felt as if his entire body had been frozen, and his face instantly turned pale.

"Why should we stop them?" Elder Feng asked flatly, and the entire chamber instantly turned dead silent. The current Elder Feng was the one the members of the Lie Shan Family remembered.

"Elder... Elder Feng... the Tai Ci Family is one of the three greatest families in the planet. Black Water City is under their jurisdiction, and if any of their family members run into an accident in this place, then the Lie Shan Family will definitely incite Tai Ci Family's fury, this is..." the old man quickly explained as he shuddered. He had a feeling that if he did not explain his reason for his request clearly, he would be immediately frozen to death.

Lie Shan Family's rules were incredibly strict, and Elder Feng had another task in the family - to monitor the members of the Lie Shan Family. He had the right to kill or spare them, and it was not as if Elder Feng had never used the right either. He had used it many times in the past, and every single time he did so, someone in the Lie Shan Family died.

Lie Shan Family's Progenitor, Lie Shan Xiu, turned a blind eye to this. Because of that, the members of the family were incredibly respectful to Elder Feng.

"You are right," Elder Feng said flatly.

When the old man heard this, he immediately let out a huge sigh of relief in his heart. By then, his body was already drenched in sweat. Cold sweat continued seeping out

through his skin, but right at the instant he relaxed, Elder Feng's chilly voice reverberated in the air once again.

"Seal off all exits in the auction hall, activate the Segregation Rune, besides those from the Yu Family, do not allow even a single person to get out of the place... If they resist, kill them!" Elder Feng's voice was calm, but there was a freezing tone and a murderous aura contained in his calm speech, which was enough to make all the members of the Lie Shan Family in the place tremble.

They might not understand why Elder Feng had said this, but the reputation he had built over the years made it so that no one dared to refute his words. They immediately lowered their heads and voiced their obedience.

When the members of the Lie Shan Family spread out to execute Elder Feng's orders, the chilling aura on Elder Feng's body gradually dissipated. Delight rose in his heart, and it turned into a kind and affable smile on his face. As he looked at Su Ming, who seemed to be looking at him through the screen of light, he found himself liking this youth more with each passing moment.

"Haha! This boy is good, he's very good!" As he laughed, Elder Feng lifted his right hand and swung it at the screen of light. Wind blew instantly, stirring up a layer of ripples that caused the screen of light to distort.

"Lie Shan Progenitor isn't here, young man," Elder Feng said with a smile. This time, his voice shot through the screen of light and echoed in the auction hall.

Su Ming frowned.

Booming sounds reverberated by his side at that moment. Yu Rou was facing off against the old man, and as they fought, she had the upper hand. However, the old man's entire body was incredibly sturdy, as if he had refined it. Most of the effects from divine abilities and Arts were greatly reduced when they landed on him.

As for the Duke of Crimson Flame, he was fighting against the old guest from Tai Ci Family, and they were fighting on equal ground.

However, this made things hard for Yu Chen Hai, because he was absolutely not the other old man's opponent. Amid the booming sounds, he was forced backwards continuously. If the two big dogs were not constantly beside the old man to occasionally launch nasty sneak attacks on him to hold him back slightly, then Yu Chen Hai would have definitely been heavily injured by now.

"How dare you commit such an act of treason?! This is Black Water City! This is Tai Ci Family's city! How dare you attack the members of Tai Ci Family here?! You won't be able to leave Black Water City! You'll regret ever provoking us! You'll have the fury of the Tai Ci Family upon you!" the young man with the fan in his hand screamed shrilly at

that moment. There was not a hint of panic on his face. Although he was retreating, his words echoed in the air.

He had the confidence because this was Black Water City and because this was where Tai Ci Family was located. He did not believe that anyone would dare to kill him in this place. If the puny Yu Family dared do so, then they would have to pay the price of being utterly annihilated.

Su Ming averted his gaze from the air above. He did not even spare a glance at the young man, but instead took a step forward. Then, right before the thousands of people's gazes, his figure distorted, and he appeared right in front of Yu Chen Hai.

Yu Chen Hai was in a disheveled state and was retreating rapidly. The expressionless old man in front of him seemed to have gotten used to the two big dogs' harmless bites and was ignoring them at that moment while closing in on his target.

Su Ming's appearance immediately excited Yu Chen Hai while the incoming old man paused in his footsteps, but right at the instant he stopped, Su Ming lifted his right hand and hurled a punch at him!

This punch contained all the power of Qi within Su Ming's body. It contained all the power within this clone of his and also his Divine Essence. In fact, when he hurled his punch forward, cracking sounds came from his body. With it, wind and clouds stirred within the auction hall. All the currents of wind instantly gathered at the spot where Su Ming was and fused into his fist. Booming sounds created from wind slicing through the air also up, and even space shattered with cracking sounds.

At the instant, the punch landed on the old man's chest.

Bang!

As a loud noise resounded, none of the old man's methods to fend against the punch could block the attack. He coughed up blood and his body immediately fell backwards. Instantly, it started showing signs of crumbling right before the crowd's eyes.

However, there seemed to be some sort of power that reversed the flow of things in his body, for as he crumbled, he started recovering as well. However, Su Ming's punch contained Divine Essence, and it prevented the old man's recovery. As the old man fell back, the two dogs which he was no longer wary against suddenly put on extremely nasty smiles.

Right then, the yellow dog swung its head. It tore apart, and a gigantic, ferocious dragon head stretched out from within the opened up space. This dragon's head was too big and was completely disproportionate to the dog's body. Once it appeared, it opened its mouth wide and snapped its jaws shut around the old man, who now had an expression of disbelief on his face.

With just one bite, half of his body went into the strange creature's mouth!

The big black dog by the side let out a loud howl and imitated the yellow dog's movements. It swung its head as well and turned it into the bald crane's bald head. Perhaps it had never wanted to bite the old man, but once it saw the Abyss Dragon's actions, it immediately thought that this particular act was incredibly mighty. Which was why when this thought appeared in its head, it let out a weird, shrill cackle and used its sharp beak to pierce the old man's... groin.

Immediately after, it turned into a black gust of wind and started plundering all the things on the old man's body.

The old man died while harboring a great amount of grievances. He did not die because of Su Ming's punch, but had died in the Abyss Dragon's mouth. His soul and Nascent Divinity were all sucked away by the Abyss Dragon. Then, once he died, all his possessions were taken away by the bald crane.

He had never expected that one of the two big dogs... was a dragon!

Chapter 886: Master Who Taught Me My Craft

Once the old man died and his body was devoured by the Abyss Dragon, it turned back to the big yellow dog and even wagged its tail while winking at the bald crane, which had now resumed the black dogs form as well and was winking back. They were both incredibly pleased with themselves.

"Well? Your Grandpa Crane's plan was great, right? Heh heh~"

Clearly, the dragon, which had the bald crane's constant company, had been corrupted...

"That's... That's a dragon?"

"That's not a dog either! That's a bird!"

"Those two creatures are too despicable! That's... That is... So they've been pretending to be weak all this while!"

"We have to be careful of those two creatures, especially that bird. It's... it's too shameless, too brutal, how could it...?"

The cultivators who had been observing this fight in the area found their jaws falling slack from shock when they saw the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon's transformations. They had never seen ferocious creatures that could be so despicable!

They immediately became cautious and engraved the bald crane as well as the Abyss Dragon's appearance in their minds. The bald crane's intrepid act just now had especially horrified them, and they felt the pain the old man must have suffered before he died.

In fact, their wariness towards the bald crane surpassed that which they held for the terrifying creatures that resided in their memories. After all... that intrepid strike was something that would cause all male cultivators' skins to crawl and their hearts to shudder.

"That bird, I-I saw it take away a storage bag just now and even check it for a while. It didn't seem too pleased with what it saw."

"Damn it, if that bird acts this way, then its master is definitely this sort of person as well! We absolutely can't provoke this person! Absolutely, absolutely can't provoke him!"

In the mid of the shock and the hubbub created by the cultivators in the area, the black dog which was the bald crane swept its gaze around the area with a fierce and displeased stare. It had a... rather simple personality. That intrepid strike just now had been something it thought of on the spot, but when it saw the terrified expressions, it suddenly felt that... it could use this attack more often.

As it pondered over it, it started cackling foolishly. That expression, those cackles, and that gaze immediately caused all the cultivators which it was looking at to feel their skins crawl again.

Su Ming paid no attention to the dirty acts committed by the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon. With an indifferent expression, he continued ignoring the now pale young man and instead walked towards the other old man who was fighting against Yu Rou and whose apathetic expression made him look like a puppet.

Two of the three old men had died. Their expressions before death made them seem more like real people, but during all other occasions, they only had that apathetic look on their faces.

They were clearly puppets, and it was the type Su Ming was familiar with - a Soul Catcher's puppet.

He did not move quickly, but each step he took caused the auction hall to tremble. As he stepped in the air, an endless amount of ripples spread out in space, so even the old man who was fighting against Yu Rou had a hint of change in his expression. He gave up on fighting against Yu Rou and without any hesitation began retreating.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. If the old man was truly someone in the later stage of World Plane Realm, then Su Ming would have been unable to kill him with just one punch, but this old man was a Soul Catcher's puppet, and for someone who had

mastered the Soul Catchers' Spells, killing this sort of puppet became a natural act of oppression.

The puppet's sturdy and invincible body was as frail as a piece of paper to Su Ming. The strange divine abilities it cast were mostly related to a Soul Catcher, and Su Ming was completely unfettered by these Spells.

Everything about the puppet was suppressed by Su Ming, so it was completely impossible for it to fight back. The suppression on its soul prevented it from bringing out its full power.

When Su Ming saw the puppet fleeing, his expression did not change. However, the young man in the distance and Tai Ci Family's guest, who was fighting against the Duke of Crimson Flame, revealed faint shock.

They understood the three puppets and knew that they did not fear pain. The fluctuations of their emotions were barely noticeable, and they did not know how to be fearful of other manner of beings. However, the moment Su Ming got closer to the puppet, it went fleeing, performing an act that it had never done before. This sort of thing left them in temporary disbelief.

Su Ming walked towards the puppet. He did not do so quickly, but there was a presence of a Soul Catcher radiating faintly around his body at that moment. There was also a profound look in his eyes that looked like vortices. All of these things caused a powerful, suppressive feeling over the puppet.

In fact, at that moment, the small Candle Dragon Su Ming had left behind with the Echang clone in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land lifted its head and flicked its tongue. Dark light shone in its eyes. It was a ferocious beast that was connected to Su Ming's soul, and it could sense the fluctuations in Su Ming's soul as well as him walking towards a Soul Catcher's puppet at that moment.

It immediately sensed a faint connection formed between its soul and Su Ming's soul. It was this connection that created a faint of image of the Candle Dragon to behind Su Ming as the air behind him distorted while he walked over.

At the instant the image appeared, the old puppet shuddered and gave up on fleeing. Then... as it trembled, it kowtowed before Su Ming, not daring to move any longer.

At the instant he kowtowed before Su Ming, the expression of the old Tai Ci Family guest who was fighting against the Duke of Crimson Flame changed drastically, and he coughed up a huge mouthful of blood. When the blood turned into blood fog that exploded in the area, it blocked off the Duke of Crimson Flame's divine abilities, and the old guest retreated without any hesitation, moving beside the young man who was now so shocked that terror had appeared on his face. The old man grabbed his body and retreated swiftly. At that moment, he also roared at Lie Shan Family for the first time.

"Lie Shan Family, this is your auction hall! Why are you still not showing yourselves and attacking?! If anything happens to the young master, then all of you will have to die with him!"

The old man's words swiftly reminded the pale young man of his status. As he was brought backwards, he immediately shouted shrilly, "Lie Shan Family, I order you to kill this person!"

As the two of them retreated while shouting, booming sounds rose from around the auction hall, and the shadows of people appeared. Needless to say, they belonged to the members of the Lie Shan Family.

In fact, even Song Qing, the member of Lie Shan Family who hosted the auction and Lie Shan Kang Jiu were among these people, and they had the auction hall surrounded.

Their appearance immediately caused the cultivators in the area to let out a sigh of relief, because they knew that Lie Shan Family had finally decided to intervene. After all, this was Lie Shan Family's auction hall. They would not allow any sort of battles in here, much less allow the death of a member of the Tai Ci Family.

This was something obvious, and it was a thought shared by all the cultivators.

It was also what the young man and the Tai Ci Family guest thought. At the same time the two of them let out sighs of relief, they swiftly retreated, intending to leave this place. Once they left, what would come next would be extreme revenge dealt to the Yu Family.

The young man could even imagine it while cruelty boiled in his heart. Once he left the place, he would cry and plead for the members of the older generation in his family to attack. He would have them crush all of Su Ming's bones, but also make sure that he did not die. He would have Su Ming watch how he would violate and torture the maidservant. In fact, as he laughed coldly, he cast Su Ming a look, because the other's handsome looks had caused another licentious thought to appear in the young man's head. Besides violating the maidservant, he could also force himself on Su Ming.

As he thought about this, the young man began laughing in a lecherous manner. However, his laughter frozen several breaths later, because a loud bang had cut it off. Just as they were about to leave the auction hall, his they were both blocked by an invisible barrier, which bounced them back.

This was Lie Shan Family's protective screen of light. It was the Rune that protected the entire auction hall, and it was definitely not something that could be broken in a short period of time. The old Tai Ci Family guest's expression changed, and a hint of disbelief as well as fear appeared in his eyes.

"Lie Shan Family, what is the meaning of this...?" the old man asked strenuously. A feeling as if something terrible was about to happen rose in his heart. He did not believe

that the Lie Shan Family would do such a thing, but the truth before his eyes forced him to believe it. In fact, he could see all the members of Lie Shan Family not attacking Su Ming and his group once they appeared. They just stood there, still and unmoving.

The old man instinctively cast a glance at one of the Lie Shan Family members that stood close to him, but that person avoided his gaze, and the Tai Ci Family's guest instantly felt his heart sink.

No one answered his question. Instead, a chuckle that sounded as if it came from an old person came from the area above the auction hall. Once it resounded, an old man walked out.

That old man had an ancient look that told everyone that he had lived for a long period of time, though no one knew precisely how many years that meant. When he walked forward, wind howled around him, shattering space all around. In fact, there seemed to be the eye of a typhoon at the spot where the wind was coming from behind the old man.

That eye of the typhoon was round... and it looked like a sun!

At the instant Yun Long Hu saw the old man, shock appeared on his face. He staggered a few steps backwards, and his face turned pale. The young man beside him was also trembling so badly that he could not even say a single word. A mighty pressure that almost suffocated him descended on the entire auction hall once the old man appeared.

"Greetings, Elder Feng!" All members of the Lie Shan Family immediately bowed towards the old man.

Right when these words were spoken, the thousands of cultivators in the auction hall lowered their heads and paid their respects to the old man as their bodies trembled under the mighty pressure. Their hearts were filled with shock, because they had heard of this man called Elder Feng before. He was an existence that was a legend in Lie Shan Family.

The Duke of Crimson Flame's expression was incredibly grim. With a flash, he appeared beside Su Ming. He could also sense the pressure coming from Elder Feng's body, and even if it was him, under this pressure, he felt restricted, as if he was enveloped by mud.

"Young master, this person... is at the very least at Solar Kalpa Realm!"

As Yu Rou's veil fluttered, she trembled. The mighty pressure coming from Elder Feng was something she could not bear, and it was even more so for Yu Chen Hai. He had already lowered his head to bow to this man.

Even the big yellow dog that was the Abyss Dragon did not dare to move as it trembled. Only... the black dog that was the bald crane was still wagging its tail in the air, with a look that said 'I-am-the-mighty-Grandpa-Crane-what-can-you-do-to-me-huh?'

Once the entire auction hall had fallen into dead silence due to Elder Feng's appearance, Elder Feng spoke slowly towards Su Ming with a smile on his face. "What is your name?"

Due to his smile and his slow speech, all the members of Lie Shan Family who knew him immediately had countless speculations.

"This member of the younger generation is named Su Ming. Greetings... Master who taught me my craft." Su Ming looked at Elder Feng, and after some time, a smile appeared on his face and he wrapped his fist in his palm to bow to the old man.

Elder Feng's eyes lit up and he laughed in joy.

Chapter 887: Fourth God of Berserkers

Su Ming's words immediately caused all the cultivators in the auction hall to sport changes in their expressions, especially the young man and old guest from Tai Ci Family. Both of them had expressions of disbelief.

They believed that Su Ming was a member of the Yu Family, then this bow was equivalent to Yu Family forming an alliance with Lie Shan Family. Even though with Tai Ci Family's size they did not need to care about two middle-tier families forming an alliance... the both of them were still in Lie Shan Family's auction hall!

"So this fellow Daoist is an acquaintance of the Lie Shan Family? This is a misunderstanding... a misunderstanding..." Yun Long Hu immediately let out a fake cough and laughed before he wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming.

"This is Tai Ci Family's mistake. I hope that Yu Family and Lie Shan Family won't mind... I..." Yun Long Hu had reacted to this situation incredibly quickly and immediately began to lighten up the situation while putting himself at a low position. In his mind, the Lie Shan Family should not try to kill them. After all... it was not worth it.

Yet before he could even finish speaking, Elder Feng frowned while standing in front of Su Ming.

"Too noisy!" he said in a chilling voice, and it instantly turned into thunderous roars. As they reverberated in the auction hall, the sound shook Yun Long Hu's heart and caused it to tremble. His eyes, nose, ears, and mouth started bleeding as he staggered a few steps backwards. In an instant, his face turned stark pale.

The young man beside him also had a terrified expression, and he shuddered even more violently. He was frightened now. Since the time he was born, this could be said to be the first time he was truly terrified, and he was suddenly incredibly regretful of his actions, but it was already too late. He did not know what was the goal of the Lie Shan Family for making him stay in this place, but he could still not believe that Lie Shan Family wanted to wage war against Tai Ci Family.

"Master who taught me my craft'... In the wide world and in this boundless galaxy, there is only one person who can call me thus. Perhaps this person is you, and perhaps... it is not you." There was still a smile on Elder Feng's face, but there was a hint of uncertainty hidden deep in his eyes, and it was the reason why he wasn't completely certain of Su Ming's identity.

This was something that should be nearly impossible, because if Su Ming was the scion that the projection he left in the land of Berserkers found, then the connection he would form with Su Ming at that moment would definitely be complete. However... while there was a connection between him and Su Ming, there was also a mighty pressure within it that made even his Qi show faint signs of boiling.

This made a speculation rise in Elder Feng's mind.

"You will know if you test me."

Su Ming wrapped his fist in his palm once again and bowed towards Elder Feng. Once he did so, he straightened his back and lifted his right hand slowly with his fingers pointed upwards, as if he was holding something.

Elder Feng's eyes lit up and as his smile turned even more affable. He too lifted his right hand, making a series of actions that were the exact same as Su Ming's.

This scene immediately attracted the gazes of all those around them, especially those of the Lie Shan Family. They were staring at the scene intently. When they saw that Su Ming and Elder Feng were making the exact same movements as if they came out from the same mould, most of them immediately remembered the words Elder Feng had once spoke regarding his disciple.

"Sun Genesis!"

Su Ming lifted his head and had his right hand seize the air above him in one quick motion. Endless gusts of violent wind instantly appeared out of nowhere in the auction hall. Those gusts rapidly gathered around Su Ming's right hand while howling. When the people below looked over, it seemed as if his right hand had turned into an eye of a typhoon. Violent wind spun swiftly around his hand, and a vast amount of power spread out from it.

"Sun Genesis." As Elder Feng smiled, he said the two words as well and swung his right hand casually. A cyclone that was the same as the eye of a typhoon Su Ming held in his right hand appeared around Elder Feng's right hand.

The two of them took a step forward at the same time and instantly closed in on each other.

Bang!

The loud explosion instantly reverberated in all directions. This was the clash between the two cyclones formed by two people executing Sun Genesis at the same time, a match between the previous Wind Berserker and the current Wind Berserker for them to learn from each other... and a test from the person who passed down the legacy to the person who received the legacy!

Amid the booming sounds, Su Ming retreated several hundreds of steps back. A bright light shone in his eyes as he looked at Elder Feng before and lifted his right hand while hundreds of feet away. Then, he hurled a punch at the space above the auction hall. At the instant he did so, he swiftly rushed upwards.

Even though he was rushing upwards, Su Ming did not travel in a straight line, but started moving in circles. In the blink of an eye, he had already moved in so many circles that others could no longer count the number he'd made. What was more, as he moved in circles, violent gusts roared furiously, then while they gathered around him, they started going around in circles in the direction Su Ming was moving.

At the same time, a hot wave of air spread out each time Su Ming completed a circle, and it would be dragged into the whirlwind before spreading out. Yet soon, a large amount of freezing air emerged from the spot above Su Ming, right where he had hurled his fist upward just then. This freezing air met with the hot air from below, and with the rotating wind acting as the center, one of the gusts of air rose upwards, while the other moved downwards. As they crashed into each other, the wind howled, and at the same time, Su Ming spoke.

"Lunar... Burial!"

Elder Feng laughed heartily, revealing joy that came from the depths of his heart. He lifted his left hand and swung it casually above his head, and at the spot above where his left hand was, freezing wind spread out. He swung his right hand downwards at the same time, and hot air instantly spread out from his right hand. Once he had both his hands meet, hot and cold air intersected with each other... and wind appeared!

"Your Lunar Burial is still not up to standard. You've only mastered its very basics and have not understood its essence. Looks like you haven't trained seriously." Elder Feng clasped his hands together, and wind stirred with a loud howl.

"Look closely. This is... the true Lunar Burial!" Elder Feng abruptly separated his hands from each other, and as he did so, a ball of wind that was rotating swiftly emerged between his hands.

As he pushed it forward, that ball of wind immediately charged towards Su Ming and instantly crashed into the windstorm formed by his Lunar Burial.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Three consecutive bangs shook the entire auction hall. Su Ming was also pushed a hundred something feet backward each time a bang rang in the air. The wind around him formed from his Lunar Burial completely dissipated, and once the ball of wind Elder Feng pushed forward completely destroyed all the wind around Su Ming, it closed in on him, but by the looks of it, it did not seem to want to harm him. Instead, when it eventually touched the center of Su Ming's brows, it dissipated on its own. This was clearly a slight punishment from Elder Feng towards Su Ming, because he was a little displeased with the three styles of his Wind Separation Art.

Just like how a member of the older generation would punish a member of the younger generation slightly when they were not training seriously.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He was the Wind Berserker, but his other identity was the fourth God of Berserkers, and another was the Ecang clone which existed between heaven and earth in the universe, and he was even a direct descendant of the Abyss Builders.

Besides his identity as the Wind Berserker, all of his other identities would not allow Su Ming to have that ball of wind touch the spot between his brows, which was why as his eyes sparkled, Su Ming did not move back. Instead, at the instant the ball of wind closed in on him, the sun, moon, and stars suddenly appeared in his eyes, along with a large amount of Divine Essence Runic Symbols. As they fused together, they activated the strange power from the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao Su Ming had merged into his Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon.

"Under normal circumstances, I would not be able to execute Wind Separation, but with the help of my divine abilities, I can execute... another Art that is similar to Wind Separation!" At the same time Su Ming calmly said these words, the sun and moon in his eyes lit up with a brilliant light.

A bang surged into the sky from where Su Ming was. As the brilliant light from the sun and moon shone, and stars appeared under his feet, all the thousands of people in the auction hall heard loud booms in their hearts. Their vision instantly became blurry, as if the world had turned upside down on them, and all of them felt as if they had been forced into some sort of dimension.

The worlds they saw were different for each one of them. Those worlds were based on the memories they did not want to recall the most. Yet all the people couldn't help themselves but get immersed.

"Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon: Wind Separation," Su Ming said softly. At that instant, the ball of wind in front of him came to an abrupt halt, stopping only a few inches away from him, but those few inches seemed to turn into a huge ravine separating two sides of the world, and the wind could not cross over that ravine.

The true Wind Separation was to make an entire galaxy in the universe where he was to be void of wind with just one thought... because he was the one who would give rise to wind.

As he had full control over one World.

Su Ming could not do this, but with the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon working together with the strange power from the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao, he could create an illusory world. That illusory world was naturally an illusion, and in that illusion... he could make it so that there was no wind in it.

If it was just this, it would still be just an illusion and everything would still be fake. However, the power contained in the Three Gates of Heavenly Dao was something Su Ming could not fully comprehend and master up to this date. It was... a strange power that could turn illusions into reality, could turn fantasy into something real.

Because of that, Su Ming's illusion was no longer a complete illusion, but had a hint of reality contained within itself.

And the main determiner that would decide whether this illusion was true or false was not Su Ming, but the thousands of people in the illusion. As long as most of the people in here believed that the illusion was real... then it would be real!

All of this might sound abstruse and mysterious, but in truth, even Su Ming himself was still trying to understand this Art, and it could be said that this was the first time he truly executed it.

Su Ming could not use this Art for a long period of time. He had no idea whether this was just a coincidence, but just like the three breaths the malicious spirit that weighed the elephant had mentioned, Su Ming could only execute this Art for three breaths.

The span of three breaths ended within an instant. The worlds before everyone's eyes shattered, and when everything returned to normal, most of the people had dazed expressions on their faces. Only Elder Feng's eyes sparkled brilliantly. He was looking at Su Ming, the ball of wind in front of him having already vanished.

"I've witnessed another form of Wind Separation. You... are good. You are very good. The path of Dao is not constant, and there are plenty of changes that will happen. I cannot say that only my epiphany is right, because the one that suits a person the most is the most accurate path for them to follow.

"This Wind Separation that you've modified is very good!" A smile gradually appeared on Elder Feng's face. That smile was filled with happiness which was incredibly strong, the kind he had not felt for tens of thousands of years.

As Elder Feng smiled, he shook his head, and his expression abruptly became serious. He even took a few steps backwards before he looked at Su Ming with rapt attention. Then, he slowly wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply towards him.

"I, the Wind Berserker of Berserkers, greet... the God of Berserkers! Sir, may I know which generation you belong to?"

Chapter 888: Lie Shan Family's True Strength

As Elder Feng's expression became solemn and he wrapped his fist in his palm before bowing towards Su Ming, the cultivators who had snapped out of their daze were immediately dumbfounded when they heard that sentence.

Berserkers, Wind Berserker, God of Berserkers—they did not know the meaning behind these three words, but from Elder Feng's solemn expression, they could tell that this was clearly a secret that an average cultivator wasn't privileged to hear.

Yet now... they heard, and all those with a slightly more intelligent mind could immediately tell what sort of outcome those who heard things they should not hear would face!

In fact, there were even some cultivators who had began withdrawing slowly, but with the Protection Rune the Lie Shan Family set up in the auction... they could not leave.

Elder Feng bow towards Su Ming caused all the members of the Lie Shan Family in the area to have changes in their expressions. They were of the Lie Shan Family, and it was only natural for them to know what sort of cultivation method they practiced. They also understood the origins of their family. However, they had a seal in their blood, because of which outsiders were unable to learn anything about them no matter what sort of Soulseeking methods they deployed.

This secret was also the foundation of Lie Shan Family's rules. Over the course of numerous years, there had been people who slipped, but all these slips would be discreetly solved in the end. All those who needed to be killed were killed, and all those

who needed to be destroyed were destroyed, because of which the Lie Shan Family was only a middle-tier family to others over the years.

After Elder Feng bowed to Su Ming, the members of the Lie Shan Family looked at each other. Lie Shan Kang Jiu's heart trembled. He suddenly understood why he had lost his composure when he was previously before Su Ming. He sucked in a deep breath, and became the first person among the members of the Lie Shan Family to wrap his fist in his palm before bowing to Su Ming.

"I, Lie Shan Kang Jiu, greet the God of Berserkers!"

"Greetings, God of Berserkers!"

"We greet the God of Berserkers!"

These words traveled out continuously from the mouths of the members of the Lie Shan Family. Their voices rose and fell, reverberating in the auction hall.

The smile had also disappeared from Su Ming's face at that moment and a dignified expression came to his face. He stood in midair and looked at Elder Feng calmly. At that moment, he was no longer a Wind Berserker... but the awe-inspiring fourth God of Berserkers!

"Elder Feng, please rise. I am the fourth God of Berserkers," Su Ming said softly.

When Elder Feng heard this, he lifted his head and looked at Su Ming. There was a kindly look in his sparkling eyes, along with a deep affection. Ever since he had discovered that Su Ming was his scion, he had acknowledged him and knew that he would be his only disciple who would inherit his legacy.

It was especially so when he found the reason as to why he had felt uncertain about Su Ming previously. That reason had come from the land of Berserkers acknowledging Su Ming, from the will of the Berserkers' galaxy gathering upon Su Ming, and from numerous Berserkers placing the hopes in their hearts towards this God of Berserkers. At that moment, his affection for Su Ming turned into a sense of pride.

"It has already reached the fourth... It has been so many years since I left with the Lord." Elder Feng shook his head. There was a sentimental look on his face, along with nostalgia.

When he shook his head, he lifted his right hand and swung it sideways.

"Lie Shan Family, heed my orders. Activate the Rune and kill all those who participated in the auction." When Elder Feng said these words, a ghastly presence instantly filled the hall, and the thousands of cultivators in the auction hall all showed drastic changes in their expressions.

"You..."

"I'm willing to swear an oath that I absolutely won't reveal what happened today, you..."

"You're just the Lie Shan Family, just a middle-tier family! There are thousands of us here, how're you going to kill us?!"

A ruckus instantly rose and reverberated in the air, but soon, that noise turned into shrill screams of pain. The light from the Rune in the auction hall stretched out endlessly. As booming sounds echoed in the hall, the members of the Lie Shan Family started slaughtering all the people in the area.

However, there were not many people in the Lie Shan Family. Logically speaking, they would indeed be unable to kill these thousands of people... but once the Rune was activated, several thousands of presences descended swiftly. These thousands of presences turned into thousands of men, and Berserker Marks spread out through their bodies. Their eyes were dull, but there was a vast amount of Qi erupting from within them.

For a short period of time, an endless amount of screams rang in the air within the auction hall. A moment later, once the voices disappeared, all the thousands of cultivators were dead. Blood dyed almost every spot in the auction hall red.

This slaughter came so abruptly that the old guest and the young man from Tai Ci Family were completely stunned.

"God of Berserkers, how should we deal with the two people from Tai Ci Family?" Elder Feng looked at Su Ming.

"This area belongs to the Lie Shan Family. Elder Feng, you can handle it." Su Ming's expression remained as calm as usual, but he was shocked by the slaughter just then. Elder Feng's casual attitude to this and the blood soaked auction hall formed a stark contrast against each other.

"All those who offend the God of Berserkers must be executed!" Elder Feng turned around, and for the first time, trained his eyes on the old guest and the young man from Tai Ci Family.

Yun Long Hu's expression turned pale, and at that moment, he grabbed the young man, intending to retreat.

However, just when he started moving, Elder Feng lifted his hand and swung it gently forward.

"Lie Shan Family, how dare you?!"

"If you kill me, Lie Shan Family will die with us! I have my family's Life Jade with me, and the moment I die, the family will immediately know that I ran into an accident in Lie Shan Family's auction hall!" the young man shouted shrilly.

However, the moment he finished speaking, his voice turned into the noise of him coughing up blood. With the one swing of the arm, endless wind appeared around him. As it moved about with loud whistling sounds, the young man lost his flesh and blood and was reduced to bones. In an instant, he was crushed.

As for the old guest from Tai Ci Family, during that life-threatening crisis, all his power erupted from his body. A huge green log surrounded his body and resisted the wind around it.

However, it only managed to resist the wind for a few breaths. Elder Feng let out a cold harrumph, and the nine green logs shattered together. The old man's body was torn to pieces as he let out a roar that screamed he could not accept his fate.

This scene caused the Duke of Crimson Flame's eyes to shrink.

Yu Rou also looked at the scene with a look of rapt concentration but remained silent and did not say a word.

As for the Abyss Dragon and the bald crane, one of them was nervous while the other had a lackadaisical expression that said it was completely unconcerned.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he looked towards Elder Feng. "Will killing all the members of the Tai Ci Family affect Lie Shan Family?"

"Fourth God of Berserkers, you have just arrived in Black Ink Planet, and there are plenty of things you do not know about. It is fine, let us see the true strength of the current Lie Shan Family."

Elder Feng smiled faintly, then lifted his right arm before swinging it forward. Booming sounds immediately rose in the area, and at that moment, a large illusory screen of light appeared and floated in the air in front of them.

As that screen of light distorted and shone, it gradually became clear. A map of the aerial view that belonged to the entire Black Water City took shape. A gigantic swamp could be seen along with numerous buildings as well as Lie Shan Family's auction hall among them.

The auction hall was incredibly quiet at that moment. The bodies of the thousands of men became blue and gradually disappeared. As for the members of the Lie Shan Family, they began clearing up, occasionally lifting their heads to look at Su Ming and Elder Feng. All of them were silent, and as they cleared up the place, the stench of blood slowly faded away.

Su Ming looked at the screen of light calmly. He was very curious towards Lie Shan Family's strength. With his own power, the first God of Berserkers had been able to rise to power and even create the Berserkers' Dynasty. Now, this sort of person had been in Black Ink Planet for tens of thousands of years. If he had only been able to create a mere middle-tier family, Su Ming would be slightly disappointed.

However, based on Elder Feng's actions and words, it seemed like the Lie Shan Family was completely unconcerned about the Tai Ci Family. In fact... they were not bothered by any of the families on Black Ink Planet.

After looking at the screen of light for a moment, Su Ming suddenly discovered that the entire Black Water City seemed to have fallen into abrupt silence. The cultivators on the stone bridges all lifted their heads.

In this silence, Su Ming heard bell tolls echoing from the great building at the center of Black Water City.

As the bell tolls rang loudly, the sky distorted, and shadows of people manifested in those distortions. The weather changed, and as wind swept up in all directions, a gigantic pressure descended on Black Water City with a loud bang.

Soon after, as more people appeared in the sky, a big hall of several hundreds of thousands of feet appeared in the clouds. It slowly descended, revealing a couple words carved clearly in on the side. They read: Hall of Great Kindness !

"This is the order of the Tai Ci Family. Kill all members of the Lie Shan Family in Black Water City, and from now on, the Lie Shan Family... will disappear from Black Ink Planet!"

An awe-inspiring voice came with a thunderous roar from the Hall of Great Kindness. As that voice reverberated in the air, hundreds of people appeared in the sky. They charged forward, rushing straight to Lie Shan Family's auction hall.

"Black Water City is controlled by a branch of the Shamans who descended in this place from the world outside and later named themselves the Tai Ci Family. Ink Kirin City belongs to Divine Essence Star Ocean's Mo Family, and Worldly Star City was built by the Hua Family, who rose to power due to the help from the four Great True Worlds.

"They are the three greatest families in Black Ink Planet... but Black Ink Planet belongs to us." Elder Feng's voice was calm, but there was a formless, domineering presence contained within his voice, and as he spoke, that presence spread out without any attempt to conceal anything.

As Elder Feng spoke and Su Ming saw the entire Black Water City on the screen of light, the ground trembled violently for a moment, and soon after, the stone bridges

started twisting about. Loud roars rose into the air, and Su Ming's breathing froze for a moment, because the numerous stone bridges had turned into stone dragons!

They roared together, and the world trembled. They then rushed into the sky simultaneously.

"Tai Ci Family has been in Black Water City for a very long time. It's about time for the three greatest families to be replaced. Yu Family is quite good; they can take Tai Ci Family's place and become the new greatest family around here," Elder Feng said flatly.

As he spoke, the picture in the screen of light changed once again. Right before their eyes, the endless stone dragons flew up while all the roofs within Black Water City started shining with a dark light at that instant. In the mid of this, it looked like the roofs had been disassembled, and complicated Runes appeared on the now roofless buildings.

The entire Black Water City was occupied by these densely packed Runes!

Pillars of light rose from the Runes with a loud bang, and explosions continuously rang in the air, charging towards the Hall of Great Kindness in the sky!

There were ten thousand pillars of light, ten thousand stone dragons—everything in Black Water City had changed!

1. Great Kindness: Is the translation for Tai Ci, 太 (tai4) is great, very, extreme, and 慈 (ci2) is kindness, respect.

Chapter 889: Black Ink's Order

Su Ming looked at everything happening in the screen of light. The Duke of Crimson Flame's eyes had already widened in shock by then, and he was pointing at the Runes on all the buildings.

"This is... the fifth True World's Great Bright Light Rune! It's one of the defensive measures within the fifth True World!" His heart trembled. Even to those in the fifth True World, the Great Bright Light Rune was a great mystery. Besides the race who built this Rune, it was difficult for anyone else to understand it.

When the four Great True Worlds had fought against the fifth True World, the latter had used all the planets within its galaxy to build an endless amount of Runes like these. Every single time it was activated, the True Worlds would tremble. The destructive power of that Rune was difficult to describe with words. If anyone managed to survive after seeing it with their own eyes, they would find it a very difficult sight to forget.

"Fellow Daoist, you are a well-learned man. That's right, this is the fifth True World's Great Bright Light Rune," Elder Feng said with a smile after he cast the Duke of Crimson Flame a look, his eyes narrowed. However, once he finished saying these words, he changed the topic and said a sentence that caused the Duke of Crimson Flame's pupils to shrink.

"As expected of the Duke of Crimson Flame, the general of the seventh army in the fifth True World stationed in the eighth southeast region of the galaxy. It's not really that surprising that for you to recognize the Great Bright Light Rune."

The Duke of Crimson Flame's expression changed, but Su Ming remained as calm as usual and only turned his head slightly to look at Elder Feng.

"Fourth God of Berserkers, I know about your heroic deeds in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence and everything that led you into Western Ring Nebula's foreign land, but I did not know that you were the Fourth God of Berserkers at that time. Now that I thought about it, I was able to connect all of the past events together." Elder Feng gave them a well-intentioned smile as he looked at them

"All the stone dragons formed by the stone bridges in Black Water City are created by the divine abilities of the Meteoric Golems in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Spirits will only be born in the stones blessed by their high priest over the course of time, and only then will they be able to absorb the power of the world to grow.

"Judging by the ripples of power on each of the stone dragons, they should have been around here for tens of thousands of years, and when we connect this to the time when Black Water City was built, it'll become clear that when Tai Ci Family built Black Water City, Lie Shan Family had a hand in the construction as well," Yu Rou said elegantly by Su Ming's side.

"Progenitor Yu Rou, the only person who managed to clear the Second Gate of Heavenly Dao thousands of years ago. I've heard for years that you are a very intelligent and perceptive person. You obtained the Moon Goddess' power and became her Apostle, and you know plenty of the secrets within Divine Essence Star Ocean. Looks like it wasn't exaggerated." Elder Feng smiled faintly. The profound look in his eyes made it seem that there were few secrets he did not know about in this world.

Yu Rou's expression remained the same as ever. She was not shocked by Elder Feng revealing her identity with just a few words. After all, this was a family that dared to stand up to the Tai Ci Family and had laid down a vast scheme at the time Black Water City was built. When this was taken into consideration, them knowing the secrets of Yu Family did not seem that surprising.

It was especially so when Yu Rou recalled how Elder Feng had said in a domineering manner just moments ago, "Black Ink Planet is ours."

Without absolute power, no one would be able to say these words, which was why Yu Rou was not surprised. Instead, she lowered her head to show her respect.

Yet while she was not surprised by Elder Feng revealing her identity, Yu Chen Hai's expression had already changed drastically as he stood in the distance. A storm raged in his heart as he looked at Yu Rou's back with a dumbfounded expression. His mind went blank for a short period of time.

He suddenly understood why Su Ming had been completely unbothered by him being infatuated with his maidservant when they were in one of the towers in the Yu Family before they came to Black Water City.

In fact, he could still remember the strange look on Su Ming's face at that time. Only at this moment did he come to completely understand that... the woman which he had been unable to help himself but be infatuated with and had even grown to adore was... his Progenitor!

The blow that came with this realization made him nearly unable to accept the truth for a short period of time. As his face turned pale, he took a few staggering steps backwards. A wry smile appeared on his face, along with a hint of awkwardness.

Su Ming did not pay attention to Yu Chen Hai. Instead, he looked at Elder Feng and asked calmly, "Has the First God of Berserkers found the Fifth True World?"

"I will answer that question later, Fourth God of Berserkers. Now, let us continue witnessing the true might of the Lie Shan Family in Black Ink Planet." Elder Feng avoided the question and shook his head with a smile.

As the people spoke, wind stirred up and clouds surged into the sky within the image of Black Water City in the screen of light. The hundreds of cultivators who were closing in on Lie Shan Family all experienced drastic changes in their expressions; they were clearly shocked by the scene before them. In disbelief, they quickly retreated without any hesitation, intending to return to the Great Kindness Palace.

However, the stone dragons were faster than them. The dragons closed in on them within an instant, and loud booming sounds shook the sky, drowning out of the shrill screams of pain as fresh blood poured down.

Most of the hundreds of cultivators from the Tai Ci Family died in an instant. The ones still alive fled swiftly with terror on their faces, even if many of the stone dragons behind them had crumbled. However, the stones from the stone dragons that had crumbled gathered together once again as they fell from the sky to transform into stone dragons once again and chase after the remaining cultivators.

It was at this time that the powerful light from Black Water City's Great Bright Light Rune rose from the ground. Then, with what seemed like a screen of light, it crashed into the

Great Kindness Palace. As booming sounds surged into the sky and reverberated in the air, the Great Kindness Palace began trembling intensely.

The confrontation lasted only the span of a few breaths before the palace exploded right before Su Ming's eyes. It was reduced to countless shards that tumbled backwards while hundreds of cultivators rushed out from inside, but they did not manage to escape too far before the Great Bright Light Rune swiftly crashed into them, and they shattered into pieces.

At that moment, the clouds in the sky tumbled about, and a furious roar came from above. As it did, gigantic shadows swiftly gathered together in the sky, and in the blink of an eye, several dozen massive palaces took shape.

All of these palaces were Great Kindness Palaces. They appeared together, and the mighty pressure they brought with them descended on the ground. Within that pressure was a will that would allow no resistance, along with fury that burned the nine heavens.

"Lie Shan Family, you've planned for many years and hidden yourself well, but Black Water City belongs to the Tai Ci Family! You're... just asking for death!"

As the enraged roar reverberated in the air, the entire Black Water City started trembling. Red light started shining at its edges, and in the blink of an eye, those rays of red light connected with each other to form a red screen of light. It was set over the ground like a bowl turned upside down. Once it covered the entire Black Water City, it started contracting swiftly.

Wherever it went, all towers would crumble. In fact, some of the cultivators in the city who had not managed to flee in time screamed in pain right when the red light touched them, and their bodies began decaying. All the blood in their bodies was instantly sucked away to become part of the blood-red screen of light.

Su Ming looked at everything happening within the screen of light, and Elder Feng's faint voice echoed in his ears.

"Black Water City was built by the Tai Ci Family, but the people who set the Runes, structured the city and built it were from the Lie Shan Family, even if at that time we were not known as such." While speaking, Elder Feng lifted his right hand and pointed at the screen of light.

Right away, that red screen of light that was contracting around Black Water City swiftly froze, then like a bubble bursting, the part above burst open. While shining brightly, the red screen of light let out a bang, and it moved towards the spot where it had burst open to turn into a blood-red figure.

That person was a dwarf who had long blood-red hair. Once he appeared, he lifted his head and let out a roar. As he did so, all the cultivators in Black Water City had a feeling of their blood wanting to escape from their bodies.

The red screen of light began to rush even faster to that one spot, and in the blink of an eye, it was gone, all of it absorbed by the blood-red dwarf.

"A blood-red Rune Spirit! Damn it, why is there a Rune Spirit in the Rune?! When we built this Rune in the past, we eliminated all possibilities of a Rune Spirit being born within it!" someone immediately shouted from among the dozens of Great Kindness Palaces in the sky.

The blood-red dwarf licked his lips, lowered his head, then bent his back to bow in the direction of Lie Shan Family's auction hall before he lifted his head and roared. As he did so, his body turned into a sea of blood and charged towards the sky.

At the instant the blood-red Rune Spirit rushed upwards, Su Ming saw a blood-red moon appearing on the Rune Spirit. That moon was the symbol of the Rune Spirit's level of cultivation.

At the same time, the dozens of Great Kindness Palaces in the sky moved swiftly and placed themselves on top of each other to form a structure in the shape of a tower before it swiftly pressed down on the incoming blood-red Rune Spirit.

Bang!

The tall tower formed by dozens of palaces pushed down forcefully on the blood-red Rune Spirit. Then, the tower shook, and thousands of cultivators flew out from within, all of whom had outstanding power. Once they flew out, they stood close to each other in the sky before charging towards Lie Shan Family's auction hall.

"The Tai Ci Family has grown over tens of thousands of years, and they have plenty of people in their family... but how many of those with the blood of the Lie Shan Family flowing in their veins are among them?" Elder Feng suddenly smiled, and it was a smile that was enigmatic but also slightly ghastly.

As he smiled, he brought out a black plate and threw it towards the screen of light.

Su Ming saw the plate fusing into the screen of light before appearing above Black Water City. When it appeared, the plate grew much larger until it became as big as a small hill.

There were two big words on it.

Black Ink.

Not even a single word was uttered. When this plate appeared, most of the thousands of people from the Tai Ci Family rushing to the Lie Shan Family came to an abrupt halt. Their expressions changed drastically. All of them hesitated for a moment, then they instantly turned around... to wage war against the cultivators who had been their family members just moments ago.

This scene brought a brilliant light to Su Ming's eyes. He had been able to accept everything he saw just now, no matter whether it was Black Water City's Runes, the screen of light, or everything else. They were all logical and understandable. However, the significance behind internal strife within the members of the Tai Ci Family due to the appearance of a single plate... was incredibly great.

As if he had noticed Su Ming's shock, Elder Feng turned his head around to look at the youth and smiled kindly at him.

"This is just the tip of the iceberg. The First God of Berserkers was able to create the Berserkers' Dynasty in ten thousand years, so how is it possible that he would have been able to only create a middle-tier Lie Shan Family in Black Ink Planet? We are the secret owners of Black Ink Planet!"

After Elder Feng said those words, the tower in the sky above Black Water City shuddered and shattered with a bang. The dozens of palaces collapsed while the blood-red Rune Spirit's roars rang in the air.

However, at that moment, a leisurely sigh came from the sky.

Chapter 890: The Shadow Kings

"Black Ink Dao... the kings that hide in the shadows of Black Ink Planet and dominate over all the families here... You had disappeared for tens of thousands of years. Who would have known... that you were supporting the Lie Shan Family."

As the sigh echoed in the air, eighteen shadows manifested in the sky, which were eighteen black mountains. They stood erect between the sky and earth and descended slowly down to the ground with a mighty pressure that had the ground trembling.

Eighteen old men sat on those mountains. The old men's faces were dark and sullen, and the words just now had come from one of them.

These eighteen mountains were known as Great Kindness Mountains, and the eighteen men were the Progenitors and the faces of the Tai Ci Family. All of them were at the later stage of World Plane Realm.

When the eighteen mountains appeared, the sky behind them twisted, and hundreds of Great Kindness Palaces appeared in the sky.

At that instant, the entire sky was occupied by the Tai Ci Family. Pressure and aura filled the world, showing off the strength of one of the greatest families in Black Ink Planet!

"Twenty thousand years ago, a Progenitor of our family discovered traces of Black Ink Dao lurking in the shadows of Black Ink Planet. Once we linked the destruction of various families over the course of tens of thousands of years in Black Ink Planet, we deduced your strength. We spared no pains in giving up our base in Black Water City and opened up a dimensional crack, which we then used as the base of our family.

"Many of our family members have cut themselves off from the world, never leaving the dimensional crack. I'd like to see how you people from Black Ink Dao will assimilate these members of the Tai Ci Family to become your people!" stated the old voice coming from one of the eighteen Progenitors in the Tai Ci Family, its power shaking the entire area.

"All members of the Tai Ci Family, hear our orders. Destroy... Black Water City! Kill all the cultivators there... and completely annihilate Lie Shan Family!

"Everyone is allowed to use the Relocation Runes to head to where Lie Shan Family's base is located, ignoring the cost! You must uproot the Lie Shan Family!

"Notify all families in Black Ink Planet that Black Ink Dao has appeared once again, and that there its people are part of each family. Have them... come and help us! We will use this chance to eradicate Black Ink Dao from Black Ink Planet!

"You must especially tell Mo and Hua Families! Tell them that if our family is destroyed, there will come a day when their families will be destroyed by Black Ink Dao's hands as well!

"Look at Black Ink Planet's history! Look at the four greatest families before the rise of our three families! Look at... how they were destroyed! They are... a warning to us!"

As the eighteen Progenitors sent these orders, countless cultivators flew out with a bang from the hundreds of palaces behind them. At first glance, there were tens of thousands of them around. These people were the hidden power of the Tai Ci Family, and it had mobilized almost all of them.

A portion of them had not arrived, but it was because they had already stepped into the Relocation Runes in the dimensional cracks and were headed towards Lie Shan Family's base.

Yet the moment the members of the Tai Ci Family flew out to charge towards Lie Shan Family's auction hall, the exact same thing as what happened before... came to be once again!

Among the tens of thousands of members of the Tai Ci Family, almost half of them turned around and attacked their own family in an aloof and merciless manner, without any hint of hesitation.

The sky was enveloped in a state of chaos for a short period of time.

The expressions of the eighteen Progenitors changed drastically, disbelief taking over their faces. The old man who had sent the orders just then looked over with shock. No matter how hard he tried, he could not begin to fathom just how these family members had been drawn into Black Ink Dao.

With a furious roar, he moved, and the seventeen people behind him followed in his steps. The old man turned his head around and cast a look at the seventeen Progenitors of the Tai Ci Family, who shared the same status as he did. As of then, the only people he could trust was them.

He believed that these seventeen would definitely not betray the Tai Ci Family, but at the instant he turned his head around, a deafening boom rang out behind him.

Fourteen of the seventeen people attacked the other three at the same time. As booming sounds echoed in the air, the three old men coughed up blood and fell backwards. The others did not chase after them, but instead rushed towards the old man.

Anguish, grief, confusion, and all kinds of other mixed feelings rose within this person, who was the mightiest among the eighteen Progenitors. Light covered his eyes, and loud booms rang in his ears nonstop.

None of the members of the Lie Shan Family even walked out of their family's auction hall in Black Water City. They were all watching the screen of light with a dumbfounded gaze; after all, there were some secrets in their family that even they did not know.

Su Ming was silent for a moment, then asked calmly, "How... did you manage to do this?"

"We've been doing these things since the time we served under the First God of Berserkers in the land of Berserkers. How else could we have created the Berserkers' Dynasty in the middle of all that chaos? How else could we have made the Immortals and all the other races in True Morning Dao World bow down and worship us?"

"In fact, even the Kalpa Lord Dao Chen was shocked and attacked us despite his status." Elder Feng smiled.

Su Ming fell silent once again. He suddenly realized that he had never truly understood Lie Shan Xiu. The Lie Shan Xiu described in the ancient scrolls depicting their history had been extremely mighty and a supreme existence like no other, but everything that he saw at that moment overturned such beliefs.

Su Ming looked at the screen of light and said in a low voice, "Since Tai Ci Family managed to become one of the greatest families in the planet, it's impossible for them to only have these few powerful warriors."

"That's right. The ones who appeared are just the strength of what the Tai Ci Family wants to show us," Elder Feng said with a smile.

As he said these words, a violent boom reverberated intensely in the now chaotic sky above Black Water City. That booming sound spread in all directions, replacing all the other sounds that in existence. The sky trembled, and a gigantic crack of several tens of thousands of li long appeared in the sky!

That crack was the one which the Tai Ci Family used to enter the dimension in which their family was located. Once it showed up, the shadows of people swiftly shot out to form groups that stood in the four directions!

Their appearance immediately brought the four of the eighteen old men who were being attacked in an encirclement a boost in their morale. The other members of the Tai Ci Family in the area also became excited.

Red, blue, white, black!

There were four different colored groups of armor, and there were three thousand people for each armor group. This troop that stood in four directions... was the secret force of the Tai Ci Family. Red symbolized bloodthirst, blue symbolized overflowing vitality, white symbolized endless age, while as for black... it was pure destruction.

They numbered to twelve thousand people. Yet at the instant this troop appeared and got ready to fight against the Lie Shan Family, chaos broke out among them. Internal strife... did not escape them either.

Despair rose in all the members of the Tai Ci Family who were fighting back against their own family members.

"Black Ink Dao, just how much power have you hidden among our numbers?! Shadow kings of Black Ink Planet... why must you destroy our Tai Ci Family?!" the old Progenitor who was being attacked by the familiar faces of his own family members shouted out in a shrill voice.

"Because you've offended someone you should not have offended," Elder Feng answered him, his voice echoing in Black Water City.

"Who?! Who have we offended?! Tell me! Who... have we offended?!"

"You too! You are all members of the Tai Ci Family, the blood of the Tai Ci Family flows in your veins! Why did you betray us?!"

The old man had already descended into madness. Under those intense questions, most of the traitors of the Tai Ci Family snorted coldly and attacked even more ruthlessly.

One of the traitors that besieged the old man licked the blood at the corner of his lips before they curled up into a cold sneer. A hint of derision appeared on his face.

"Tai Ci Family's blood? It's been a long time since we were those people. The blood of Black Ink Dao's Progenitor flows in our bodies. We are... Berserkers!"

The old man laughed brokenly and retreated continuously. He saw that the four armored groups that had been hidden by the Tai Ci Family were fighting furiously against each other and all the members of the Tai Ci Family were dying and getting injured. During all of this, not a single member of the Lie Shan Family appeared. All of this turned into a joke - a joke in which the Tai Ci Family was torn apart by internal strife.

This made him remember that quite a number of families throughout the history of Black Ink Planet had been destroyed by internal strife. By the looks of it now, all of this... was laughably ridiculous.

"Grand Ancestor, I... have done my best!" The old man closed his eyes.

At the instant he did so, three presences descended abruptly from the crack in the sky, and three suns manifested in the sky. The mighty pressure spreading out from those suns revealed a great power that belonged to those in Solar Kalpa Realm, and in an instant, all the people who were fighting below stopped and looked towards the sky in shock.

There were three ancient figures in the three suns, and they were... the ancestors that isolated themselves all year long within the Tai Ci Family. They were all powerful warriors in Solar Kalpa Realm.

"Those three old coots have finally appeared... but their strongest, the one who discovered us while we lurked around in the shadows... has not appeared." Elder Feng smiled faintly, formed a seal with his right hand, and pointed at the screen of light.

"Nie Li, based on the promise we made to each other in the past, it is time for you to attack."

At the instant Elder Feng said these words, Su Ming felt the ground trembling. Black Water City shuddered, and in the screen of light, he could clearly see that the gigantic swamp in which the city was built... was surging about as the water in it boiled.

Roars that did not belong to a cultivator shot through the swamp and rushed up to the nine heavens. At that instant, Su Ming saw a colossal dragon head charge out of the swamp water with a bang, rushing straight above.

That dragon head was ten thousand feet big, and it was an incredibly monstrous sight. When it rushed out, it brought with it a large amount of swamp water, and as if it had turned the universe upside down, the water made the clear sky rain. When the dragon head appeared, it rose up and roared, and its roars shook the world so much that endless cracks appeared in the planet.

Soon after, another dragon head shot out of the swamp, and a third rose with a roar after it. Three dragon heads that were ten thousand feet big and one hundred thousand feet tall swept through the sky and charged towards the three Tai Ci Family Progenitors who were in Solar Kalpa Realm.

"Nine-Headed Dragon!" Su Ming's pupils constricted as he sucked in a deep breath. He had been able to recognize with just one glance that the ferocious creature hidden in the swamp... was a living Nine-Headed Dragon!

Elder Feng pondered over it for a moment before he smiled. "You know this creature? Then I believe you must have inherited the bell we left in the land of Berserkers."

As the three dragon heads roared, muffled words could be heard in their voice.

"Nine... Headed... Dragon..."

Chapter 891: To Rise to Power

As Su Ming looked at the three dragon heads roaring from the swamp in Black Water City through the screen of light, Su Ming sucked in a deep breath, because he had just been given very shocking information in regards to Lie Shan Family's strength.

Su Ming remained silent for a while, then he looked at Elder Feng. "It doesn't matter whether it's Runes or the stone dragons, even the Great Bright Light Rune is not that shocking once I think about it logically, and it's the same for the Nine-Headed Dragon forming a promise with all of you... but how did you manage to divide the members of the Tai Ci Family and make them... betray their own family at such a crucial moment?"

"Black Ink Dao did not exist on Black Ink Planet in the past. When we came, Black Ink Dao was born. Our followers are in every single one of the families here. We are the kings that lie in the shadows, and we can decide the rise and fall of each family.

"We can stir up internal strife within the Black Ink Planet and can bring about a disaster that will shock the four Great True Worlds, such as... the change in Black Ink Planet in the past." Elder Feng smiled as he said the words that left Su Ming's heart in shock once again.

If he looked at the timeline, the time when the change in Black Ink Planet occurred was also the time when Lie Shan Xiu arrived in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

"As for us being able to turn the members of these families into Berserkers so they would betray their own family when we needed them to... Well, you might be able to guess the reason behind it." Elder Feng cast Su Ming a glance. He did not reveal everything, but instead let the ghost of a smile linger on his lips.

Su Ming remained silent for some time before he said in a low voice, "That is a divine ability the Second God of Berserkers created on his own."

"When I left with the First God of Berserkers, I saw three people who had the qualities to take over the First God of Berserkers' position. I don't know whether the Second God of Berserkers you speak of is one of them. If he is, then good for him, but if he isn't, it doesn't matter either. However, the Great Art of Heartless Berserker Seed was not created by the Second God of Berserkers, like what you're claiming. Instead... it is the Art the First God of Berserkers used to enslave the worlds, and it is also known as... the God of Berserkers' Art!

"In this universe, only Lord Lie Shan alone could create this Art with his unprecedented talent," Elder Feng said in a languid manner while shaking his head.

As they spoke to each other, the weather changed above Black Water City. Booming sounds shook the sky and earth, and there was the sound of space shattering as the three heads from the Nine-Headed Dragon fought against the three old men in Solar Kalpa Realm.

This was the first Nine-Headed Dragon Su Ming had seen. Its might was incredibly astonishing, and in fact, Su Ming believed that if the Candle Dragon had met this Nine-Headed Dragon at its prime and they had fought against each other since they were mortal enemies, it would be difficult to determine just who would win or lose.

However, Su Ming had a feeling that... this Nine-Headed Dragon seemed to be slightly stronger than the Candle Dragon.

'It has nine heads. Right now, only three of them have appeared, and it can already fight on equal grounds against three cultivators in Solar Kalpa Realm. If all nine heads

appeared together, then even if it had not reached the state of being a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, it would still be powerful enough... to be the strongest being among all those below the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.'

Booming sounds came through the screen of light and echoed in Lie Shan Family's auction hall. Su Ming looked at the city, then said calmly after some time, "No wonder you weren't worried about the Tai Ci Family relocating members of their family to where Lie Shan Family's base is located. If you have so much firepower hidden in Black Water City, then you will have even more forces hidden in the family's base."

Elder Feng lifted his right hand and swung it before himself. The air in front of the screen of light distorted, and nearly a hundred screens of light in various sizes appeared. Each one showed a different scene, and they all were the bases that belonged to the families in Black Ink Planet.

"If you're curious, then you can take a look. You'll know when you see it," Elder Feng said with a smile.

Su Ming swept his gaze over the near one hundred screens of light and fell silent.

He saw long arcs which were members of the Tai Ci Family heading to seek help from the families in Black Ink Planet.

One of the light screens showed the Chen Family, a middle-tier family in Black Ink Planet.

A long arc arrived before them with loud whistling sounds. It descended in the span of a breath, revealing itself as a middle-aged man. He was dressed in a Hanfu and had an anxious expression on his face. Once he descended, he immediately wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed towards the Chen Family in a greeting.

"I am Tai Ci An of the Tai Ci Family. With the letter from my family's Progenitor, I have come in hopes to meet Chen Family's Progenitor. This concerns a drastic change in all the families within Black Ink Planet! Chen Family's Progenitor, please allow me to have an audience with you!"

"Kill him!"

Almost at the instant the middle-aged man finished speaking, an ancient voice came from the Chen Family. Once it spoke, several dozen people charged out from inside the building.

The middle-aged man's expression changed. He wanted to retreat, but there was quite a number of powerful warriors whose levels of cultivation were higher than his. When they attacked, they did not give a single chance for him to fight back, as if they could not

wait to immediately kill him since there was someone watching their actions, and the Chen Family were eager to show their sincerity.

Everything lasted for only ten breaths before a shrill scream of pain reverberated in the air. The middle-aged man from the Tai Ci Family who had come to seek help had both his form and his spirit destroyed. It was also during this moment that an incredibly tall and built man with a flowery-patterned mask over his face walked out from the Chen Family. Accompanying him was Chen Family's Progenitor, who was standing right behind him as many other powerful warriors from the Chen Family trailed behind them.

"Sir, you don't have to worry. The Chen Family has long since found the Tai Ci Family unpleasant to our eyes. Even if you did not come today, we would have killed that person from the Tai Ci Family." Chen Family's Progenitor wrapped his fist in his palm respectfully.

The man nodded and took a step forward before he turned into a long arc and left. Once he disappeared, Chen Family's Progenitor wiped off the cold sweat on his forehead.

Su Ming saw this in the screen of light. In fact, he could see something similar in all the screens of light in front of his eyes. All the members of the Tai Ci Family who were sent out had been swiftly killed by the anxious families.

However, there were some who did not die, and those were the people who went to the Mo Family in Black Kirin City and the Hua Family in Worldly Star Family. These two families who were part of the strongest trio of families in Black Ink Planet did not kill the people who came to seek their help, but instead chose to shut their doors and refuse to see them.

As for the members of the Tai Ci Family who were heading to Lie Shan Family's base, Su Ming saw a gigantic tentacle suddenly extending from the layer of clouds in the space before the thousands of cultivators who were charging forward. There were plenty of polyps on that tentacle, and as it swept through the sky, it looked as if it had pushed the planet to make it rotate on its axis. The sea of clouds then tumbled about to reveal a huge creature that was one hundred thousand feet big.

It was clearly a big octopus. With the clouds serving as the ocean, it swam around in the sky. At that moment, it appeared with an unknown method and executed a brutal slaughter of the thousands of cultivators from the Tai Ci Family.

In fact, when Su Ming looked closer into it, he saw an old man sitting cross-legged on the octopus' head.

The old man's face was indistinct and could not be seen clearly. However, there was a layer of moisture that seemed to be surrounding the old man, creating a hazy feeling. When sunlight shone on it, a seven-colored light was produced by the refracting light.

"That's the old Rain Berserker." Elder Feng smiled.

Wind, rain, lightning, fog—the four generals under the First God of Berserkers' command!

Su Ming remained silent. When he averted his gaze from the screens of light, he had already formed an estimation of Lie Shan Family's might in Black Ink Planet. It was as Elder Feng had said, with this sort of power... they were the shadow kings of Black Ink Planet.

Their methods might be a little despicable and not something ethical, but since Lie Shan Family had chosen to be the kings of Black Ink Planet lurking in the shadows, those that exist in the dark naturally can not choose to do things in an honorable manner.

Su Ming acknowledged this, because he knew that the brighter a ball of flames burned in the dark, the more a person's attention would be attracted to it. Then, the one that would be first extinguished would be that ball of flames burning in the dark, which all the people could see.

The one that would last would instead be the existence that stayed hidden in the dark, having fused together with it. This would make it so it would never be destroyed but would turn into an existence that destroyed others.

This was the path Lie Shan Xiu had chosen when he came to Black Ink Planet. It was also precisely because of this that he managed to make Black Ink Dao into a force that could overturn the entire Black Ink Planet after tens of thousands of years of administration.

This was... a power that belonged to the Berserkers!

"The Lord God of Berserkers once said that he is a Berserker, and we are also Berserkers. Then... everything that we do, no matter how despicable and how vile... is for the sake of Berserkers existing in the entire universe.

"It isn't easy for a race to rise to power. Originally, the Lord God of Berserkers had thought that the Berserkers had already risen to power and he had been prepared to change the rulers of True Morning Dao World so that he could turn True Morning Dao World into the Berserkers' True World... but the ancient will from Yin Death Region had been easily able to destroy everything the God of Berserkers had done with just a flip of its hand, forcing him to obey its ancient will and leave the land of Berserkers to help Yin Death Region search for their entrance.

"Did you think that we did not want to leave behind some semblance of hope or some treasures for the Berserkers before we left? That we wanted to watch them gradually fall to ruin...?"

"Did you think that we truly left to search for some turning point that would allow us to reach a breakthrough? Did you really think that we did it for ourselves...?"

"Did you think that the stone monument heritage Lord Lie Shan left behind talking about how it would all end when it came to the third generation was a show of how carefree he had been and how he truly did not care about the Berserkers' rise and fall?" Elder Feng asked softly, but the impact that came with his words touched Su Ming's heart.

"I don't know why you left Yin Death Region, but I can guess that you were forced to leave as well! After all, Yin Death Region had threatened to kill all the Berserkers in the past, forcing our Lord God of Berserkers Lie Shan Xiu to leave our homeland and find the entrance to the Fifth True World for Yin Death Region's will.

"If he did not obey them, then all the Berserkers... would have been destroyed. He could only obey them in humiliation and bury all his hatred and madness in his heart as he chose to leave. Then, to make Yin Death Region's will not worry about him, he had to harden his heart... and make a clean break with the Berserkers!" When Elder Feng said these words, his expression became twisted, and a hint of madness as well as hatred appeared in his eyes.

"We spent... every single moment over the course of tens of thousands of years longing for our home. We think about our people, we think about all of you... All the buildings of Lie Shan Family map the land of Berserkers. You can't see our grief when we look at the map of the land of Berserkers. You can't see the pain we feel in our hearts when we remember our homeland.

"Over the tens of thousands of years, we have worked tirelessly. We gave up on our pride, gave up on being honorable and hid ourselves in the dark just so that there would come a day when we... could fight our way back to Yin Death Region and kill all the wills in Yin Death Region so that... the Berserkers could move out... and become the strongest race in the entire universe!"

Elder Feng's words were like a windstorm that crashed into Su Ming's heart with a bang.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 892: Our Berserkers - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 892: Our Berserkers

Chapter 892: Our Berserkers

"We have been waiting constantly for other Berserkers to walk out of Yin Death Region and come to this place. We... have been waiting for you all along. Lord Lie Shan Xiu was known as Yin Death's Child by Yin Death Region's will, and he believed that after him, there would be a second, a third, and even more Yin Death's Children who would appear.

"He waited for all this while, and we have been waiting alongside him for people from our homeland to come to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. That's why... we controlled Black Ink Planet and brought about the change in it. This was a signal for you.

"We were waiting for you.

"We wanted to create... a Berserkers' world beyond Yin Death Region! This place belongs to us, but we are already old. This is... a world created for you by the First God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu. Everything in this place was prepared for you!" Elder Feng looked at Su Ming attentively. His face was filled with sincerity, and there was not a hint of him putting up an act.

As he said these words, booming sounds rang out once again from the image of Black Water City in the screen of light. The noise was really loud, like thunder booming, and it was roaring endlessly in the city.

It was the sound that came from the fight between the Nine-Headed Dragon's three heads and the three Progenitors in Solar Kalpa Realm. A cold harrumph abruptly came from the sky and shook the entire place.

As that cold harrumph rang in the air, the sky was dyed instantly in a dark green shade. Within it was a gigantic mountain descending slowly from the sky.

The mountain was several hundreds of thousands of feet big, and it looked like there was no end to it. As it descended, the entire Black Water City shuddered and all the cultivators who were fighting immediately fell backwards.

The Nine-Headed Dragon's three heads and the three Progenitors in Solar Kalpa Realm trembled and swiftly moved back.

It was as if the giant mountain exuded a supreme mighty pressure because of which all forms of thought were forced to freeze and all the people to kowtow to it.

"Greetings, Progenitor Tai Ci!"

"I, member of the younger generation, greet Progenitor Tai Ci!"

Roars filled with excitement came from the mouths of all the members who had not betrayed the Tai Ci Family. An endless amount of hope seeped through their excited voices, along with an unshakable belief that all disasters would be resolved now that their Progenitor appeared.

As the mountain descended, Su Ming could see a gigantic face on its in the screen of light. The face protruded out of the mountain, and he could vaguely see that it belonged

to an old man. That face was filled with dignity, making it seem that if he became angry, he could make the entire universe roar with him.

Elder Feng looked at the screen of light and asked calmly, "Do you know what is the requirement to become the strongest family in Black Ink Planet?"

"It's a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. A family must have someone who has already become a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death to become... the strongest family here. Only then can they become a force of power that can intimidate the forces from the four Great True Worlds stationed here, and only then can they... trade with Divine Essence Star Ocean and the four Great True Worlds in Black Ink Planet."

Elder Feng's voice echoed in Su Ming's ears.

He looked at the gigantic face on the mountain through the screen of light. A familiar wave of pressure made him suck in a deep breath. This familiarity did not come from having seen Progenitor Tai Ci before, but from having been chased down by someone of the same level of cultivation in the past.

"That's enough!" When the mountain descended, an old voice reverberated through the world with a bang. That voice contained a will that would allow no forms of resistance, as if it was the god in this world.

"Shadow kings of Black Ink Planet, Tai Ci Family has never offended you, and neither have you done the same to us. Let this be over... Leave Black Water City. As for the members who have betrayed us, you can take them with you as well.

"This is the last straw. Do not force me to fight all of you to the death. I can sense that you... do not have a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death in Black Ink Planet."

The voice filled with an ancient air reverberated in all directions. Endless ripples rose in the air and spread outwards to sweep up a large amount of dark green clouds, so the entire sky looked like it had turned into a huge ocean that had waves raging on its surface.

"Sometimes, we will give some powerful warriors the respect they deserve, such as telling them why they lost." As Elder Feng smiled and spoke to Su Ming, he took a step forward and moved into the screen of light and vanished into thin air.

He did not ask Su Ming to go with him; after all, not everyone has the bravery to face off a powerful Master of Fate, Lives, and Death. Su Ming watched Elder Feng disappear, then a faint smile appeared on his face and he took a step forward as well and disappeared into the screen of light.

Elder Feng walked out of the air in the sky above Black Water City. As he stood there, the gaze of the gigantic face on the mountain swiveled towards him.

That one gaze contained a power that could make the sky and earth tremble, and a mighty pressure descended swiftly on Elder Feng's body. It was also during this moment that Su Ming appeared beside him.

His appearance immediately brought the mighty pressure from Progenitor Tai Ci to descend on him as well.

This was not the first time that Su Ming faced off against this sort of pressure. He stood there with brightly shining eyes, but he did not move even a single step backwards.

"You are afraid." Elder Feng's expression was calm as ever under the mighty pressure coming from Progenitor Tai Ci, and he spoke coolly. His words were not aimed at Su Ming... but were directed towards Progenitor Tai Ci.

"You are afraid of the legendary shadow kings in Black Ink Planet and the true might of Black Ink Dao... You are afraid of why Black Ink Dao... would dare to provoke Tai Ci Family even though you cannot sense someone who is of the same level as you and would even fight till the last of us falls.

"You also became wary the instant I appeared, because you do not know why I dared show up before you even though my level of cultivation is not as great as yours.

"You are also uncertain as to why I dare say such words to you." Elder Feng's voice echoed in the air, and the pupils on that gigantic face on the mountain shrank.

"Su Ming." Elder Feng turned his head around to look at his companion.

Su Ming looked over.

"Becoming the Master of Fate, Lives, and Death is the peak to the eyes of the people in the world. Theirs is a will that is equivalent to the might of heaven that no one can fight against. It is the limit of the path of Dao, and there are very few people in the world who can kill those who have reached this Realm.

"In fact, some truly terrifying poisons can even be disregarded by Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death. In fact, it can even be said that poisons that can be fatal to Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death no longer exist in this world, even though they might have existed in the ancient past.

"That is unless you've schemed against that person for tens of thousands of years and placed poison into the spirit stones he uses to practice his cultivation every day, into the spiritual aura he breathes in every day, into the air he gets in touch with every day, and even on all his clothes and everything else that he gets in contact with during the tens of thousands of years he is alive. As he comes into contact with that poison every day for tens of thousands of years, that poison will become a part of him, and only then can a

Master of Fate, Lives and Death's body and soul be destroyed after tens of thousands of years!" Elder Feng smiled.

"Should we have used this sort of poison before this person became a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death as well? In fact, should we have used it when he had just been born so that the plan would be even more perfect as his level of cultivation rose through the passage of time?" Su Ming asked calmly.

Praise immediately appeared in Elder Feng's eyes. He looked at Su Ming and nodded.

"That's right.

"Tai Ci Family became the strongest family under our control from the shadows. Your Progenitor Tai Ci Sha had disappeared a long time ago, and his life plate had shattered tens of thousands of years ago. You might have hidden this very well, but his death was part of Lie Shan Family's plan, so there is no way we would not know about this.

"Tai Chi Shan, you have great potential, but from the moment you were born, everything you came in contact with was due to Lie Shan Family's arrangements. There is not a single thing that you came in contact with that did not contain poison. We know all about Tai Ci Family's strengths and know that you have the legacy of the Shamanic Dao in you. Your family has the qualities to be awakened in your blood, and because of it, you will always have a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death among you. Tai Ci Sha's death only meant that another Master of Fate, Lives, and Death would appear in Tai Ci Family.

"All the people in your generation who could obtain the legacy died one after another, until only you remained. When you obtained the legacy and became a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death, everything that you came into contact was filled with poison.

"The dimensional crack you discovered in the past was something we let you discover. The color of your controlled world is dark green; have you never suspected it? That color... is filled with depression... along with death.

"You discovered it. That was why you tried to fuse with this Origin Mountain of Great Kindness ten thousand years ago in an attempt to get rid of the poison that had fused into your soul by using the mountain as your body. But... this mountain was something our Lord Lie Shan Xiu intentionally allowed you to discover in Divine Essence Star Ocean." When Elder Feng said these words, his expression turned ghastly, and he looked at the gigantic mountain coldly.

Su Ming stood by the side with his heart in great shock. A sudden wave of curiosity rose within him towards Lie Shan Xiu, a man who could plot against Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death, could control the entire Black Ink Planet, and could even affect a powerful family's rise and fall.

This man called Lie Shan Xiu.

After a long while, the gigantic face on the mountain asked slowly, "What is the name of that poison?" He did not refute Elder Feng's words, and in fact, there was not a single change in his expression.

"Berserker Seed number four. This is the name our Lord Lie Shan Xiu gave for the poison. It is also... your new name."

"Lie Shan Xiu..." The gigantic face on the mountain slowly closed his eyes to cover the anguish and dullness within them. He had appeared so late instead of coming right at the start to prevent his family's destruction because he knew... that he was no longer himself.

He also knew that even if he chose to die, another scion would appear in the future within the Tai Ci Family, and he or she would go down the same path.

"Let my family... leave." After a long time, Progenitor Tai Ci opened his eye. The anguish in his eyes had disappeared, replaced by a dull, lifeless look.

"Very well. In the future, a middle-tier family by the name of Tai Ci will appear in Black Ink Planet." Elder Feng smiled and nodded.

"All the members of the Tai Ci Family who belong to Black Ink Dao will fuse into the Yu Family. From now on, Black Water City will belong to the Yu Family. This is the gift we bestow onto you for what you have done for our God of Berserkers."

Once Elder Feng finished saying these things, he turned his head around to look at Su Ming.

"Didn't you say you wanted to meet Lie Shan Xiu? Come, I'll take you to him. I'll also let you see our Berserkers."

Chapter 893: Number One

"Our Berserkers..." Su Ming cast Elder Feng a glance and did not speak. He identified with those two words, but there was also a complicated feeling in him that he could not describe. This complicated feeling came from Tai Ci Progenitor's new name.

Berserker Seed number four.

If there was a number four, then while there might not be a number five and number six, but there would definitely be a number three, number two... and a number one.

Who were they...?

'With Lie Shan Xiu's intelligence and methods, if he decided to scheme against me, then perhaps I am... numbers one, two, or three.' Su Ming's expression remained calm and he did not reveal a single hint of his thoughts. All of this was just his guess, so while his thoughts might be correct, they could also be just him thinking too much.

It was just like how a person might not have the intention to harm others, but they must maintain vigilant of those around them, because... this was the world of cultivation. This was a world where the law of the jungle was the prime principle. It was a brutal era in which one wrong step would cause a person to be damned eternally.

Elder Feng walked in the air with Su Ming by his side, the two of them moving forward leisurely. Yu Rou and the Duke of Crimson Flame with the yellow and black dogs followed behind them. As for Yu Chen Hai, he had already gone back to Yu Family's base.

"More than half of the families in Black Ink Planet have been planted with the Berserker Seed, and as they are unconsciously influenced by it, they no longer think of themselves as cultivators but accept being known as Berserkers," Elder Feng said leisurely.

"We've control about an eight-tenths of the trades conducted between Black Ink Planet and the world outside. We can limit the number of a particular item being sold, and with this, we control one of the lifelines of Divine Essence Star Ocean and the four Great True Worlds.

"But the fights to seize the market have never disappeared. Once in a while, a force from the outside will come here to snatch the resources in Black Ink Planet, such as this Tai Ci Family. It is part of the Shamanic Dao from the world outside which came to this place after traversing through many galaxies. However, from the shadows, we divided them, and even if their family members had not provoked you today... before long, we would have wiped them off." Elder Feng's voice echoed in the world as he brought Su Ming through mountains, rivers, and meadows.

"Didn't you notice that you didn't feel too much unfamiliarity when you came to Black Ink Planet?" As Elder Feng moved forward, he turned his head around to smile at Su Ming.

"The rivers, meadows, and the terrain here... If you take a closer look, you will find... that everything has been modified and changed into... those of the world of the Berserkers that resides in our memories." When Elder Feng finished saying these things, he stopped speaking and chose instead to look quietly at Su Ming.

Su Ming remained silent. He had noticed this before, but as they were now moving through the land, he had been able to sense something. It was just as Elder Feng had said, there were certain parts in the terrain here... that gave him a sense of *déjà vu*.

"Ink Kirin City lies a distance away. The rules within its family are incredibly strict... and they are also the family upon which we have the least control. They are an important alien race from Divine Essence Star Ocean that serve as the core of all the alien races here, and they... have their own pride."

As they traveled through the land, Su Ming saw plenty of different families. When Elder Feng's spoke up, Su Ming looked over and saw a vast city built... upon a foreign creature!

It was a gigantic black kirin. That kirin stood on the ground with its head was tilted towards the sky. There was a yearning look on its face, as if it was looking at the star of its home.

That black kirin was several hundreds of thousands of feet big, and when Su Ming looked at it, he could see no end to the creature. A vast, mighty pressure spread out from it, and the its strength seemed to be same as the one that belonged to a Master of Fate, Lives, and Death.

Elder Feng did not bring Su Ming to Ink Kirin City, but instead they went past it. He brought Su Ming through almost the entire Black Ink Planet, and on their way they saw Worldly Star Planet as well.

In the end, when the sky gradually darkened, he brought Su Ming to a mountain range. It looked like a dragon's spine, as if a dragon had curled up on the ground and was deep in sleep.

The place was all dark.

When Su Ming looked down from the sky, he could see a vague shadow of a person standing at the peak of the tallest mountain. That person was incredibly tall and well-built. As he stood there, he gave off a feeling that he was even taller than the mountain under his feet.

It was as if wherever he went, everything would be centered around him. Even the portion of the world in this region seemed different from the other parts in the world. It gave a feeling as if it had sunken slightly, as if... it was worshiping this man.

Su Ming could only vaguely see that person's back. As he approached with Elder Feng, the large back slowly became clearer, and complicated emotions appeared on Su Ming's face.

Because... this was no longer a living person, but a stone statue.

Lie Shan Xiu's... stone statue!

Elder Feng descended on the mountain and stopped beside the stone statue. Su Ming landed beside him quietly, not saying a single word when his gaze fell on the stone statue.

After a long while, Elder Feng sighed and said calmly, "You were too late.

"This isn't a stone statue. Eight thousand years ago, Lord Lie Shan stood here and looked at the sun setting and rising as if he was thinking about something. He stood here for three years, and his body turned into a stone statue. We don't know where his soul went, just that his life force disappeared without a trace.

"However, before his soul disappeared, Elder Yu and I heard our Lord God of Berserkers' divine thought. He told us that he went... to a place where he could decide the fate of Berserkers. He might never come back from there, so we were told that if he didn't return within ten thousand years, then everything that he created would belong to the God of Berserkers who would come here after him.

"If the God of Berserkers who came to this place wanted to find him... then a competition between the Gods of Berserkers would occur!

"I don't really understand what the Lord God of Berserkers meant, but I think you should be able."

Elder Feng remained silent for a moment after saying this, then he cast a profound look at Su Ming and took a few steps backwards. He sat down cross-legged several thousand feet away and closed his eyes, speaking no more.

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as before. No one could see his thoughts. When Elder Feng moved back, he lifted his head to look at the statue before him and walked over. When he stood in front of it, he saw how Lie Shan Xiu looked like.

His face was one filled with an ancient air and an awe-inspiring righteousness. The profound look in his eyes stood out starkly even after he had turned into a stone statue, and it gave off a feeling of sadness. When Su Ming looked at the statue, he could sense that grief.

Lie Shan Xiu was looking at the sky in this manner while thinking about something.

Su Ming looked at the statue. This image was the one that fit with the image of what he thought of Lie Shan Xiu in his heart, not the person who had used all those despicable means and used Berserker Seeds with a sinister air about him.

After a long while, Su Ming mumbled to himself, saying words that only he could hear. "Is he giving me the power to choose...?"

The words Lie Shan Xiu left behind were not complicated but very straight-forward. Elder Feng had lied when he said he did not understand his words. He had simply not wanted to understand them since he was not the one who could make the decision. This was a path that could only be chosen by the one who had the right to make this decision.

The only people who had the right to walk down this path were the Gods of Berserkers.

It did not matter whether it was the first, the second, the third, or the fourth... As long as they had been acknowledged by the land of Berserkers and won over the Berserkers' hearts... they had the right to walk down this path.

Time trickled by as Su Ming continued looking at Lie Shan Xiu's statue until the night passed. When the sky grew bright once again, Su Ming lifted his head to look at the sky while standing by the statue.

His action was the exact same as that of Lie Shan Xiu. He might not be as tall and built as the other, but as he stood there, he looked as if he was stepping on top of the world.

He looked at the sky quietly.

One day, two days, three days...

Another person silently arrived to the mountain range. He was a person Su Ming had seen before on the screen of light - the old man sitting on the gigantic octopus. He was the Rain General of the four Generals of Wind, Rain, Lightning, and Fog.

His old appearance was incredibly similar to Feng Lai's. He arrived quietly and silently sat down beside Elder Feng. The two of them did not speak, just sat there as if they were waiting for Su Ming to make his choice.

Time passed, and even more people appeared behind them. These people were all old men and were all respectable personas in the Lie Shan Family. They seldom ventured out on normal occasions, but now... they had all come to this place and were looking at Su Ming's back with complicated expressions on their faces. In the end, they chose to sit down and wait for him.

Half a month later, nearly one hundred people arrived and fixed their gazes on Su Ming's body. However, he could no longer sense it. He looked at the sky as he pondered about what Lie Shan Xiu had seen in the past.

Having watched the sky for half a month, Su Ming had seen a dozen something cycles of the sun rising and setting, but he did not obtain his answer. When another half a month passed as he looked at the sky, he suddenly came to a realization while his mind was still in an absent-minded state.

There was nothing in the sky. Lie Shan Xiu had not been looking at the sky, but was looking at... himself... at his own heart. He was hesitating as he mulled over something.

"The competition between the Gods of Berserkers..." Su Ming said softly. "But I don't want to compete." He looked at the sky. "If I don't want to compete and you still don't return in two thousand years, then everything here will belong to me... Are you telling me that this is your choice?"

"But why do I feel like everything about this is just an illusion. This isn't your real choice. In the end, you would choose to have me compete against you..." Su Ming sighed. He slowly lowered his head and turned around to look at the nearly one hundred Berserkers who were thousands of feet behind him.

He was looking at them, and they were also looking at him.

Both parties were silent.

"Tell me. Who is Berserker Seed number three?" Su Ming asked slowly.

"A prodigy of the previous generation from twenty thousand years ago, who is a Heaven Stealer from Divine Essence Star Ocean." The person who answered Su Ming was Elder Feng.

"What about number two?"

"A cultivator from True Morning Dao World... who is among the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping an eye over this place," Elder Yu said hoarsely. This was the first time he spoke, and wherever his voice traveled to, it would be felt as if there was water vapor around there.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment, then asked softly, "Who is number one?"

The moment he said these words, Elder Feng and Elder Yu cast their gazes at him at the same time. However, since Su Ming was standing beside Lie Shan Xiu's statue, their gazes also landed on it, but no one could tell if it was just a coincidence or not.

Chapter 894: The Back Filled with Anguish

Su Ming turned his head sideways to cast a glance at Lie Shan Xiu's statue. Then, he sighed softly.

He understood now, and it could even be said that he understood everything completely. This was Lie Shan Xiu giving him... No, perhaps it would be more accurate

to say that he was giving all the Gods of Berserkers who would come to this place from their homeland a choice that was not a choice.

Su Ming was number one, and Lie Shan Xiu was also number one.

This was... a competition between the Gods of Berserkers. The victor could obtain the legacies of all Berserker Seeds to obtain a form of supremacy in the level of cultivation and from there lead all the Berserkers to rise to power.

This competition might not seem brutal, since there was no fight in it, let alone a battle to the death, just a search.

If Su Ming found Lie Shan Xiu, then he would win. If he could not, then he would lose.

As for the time limit... it was ten thousand years. However, eight thousand years had already passed since then, so there were only two thousand years left.

'The First God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu... hesitated in the past because of the brutality of this competition between the Gods of Berserkers, and it's not something he wants... That's why he gave a time limit of ten thousand years. If a God of Berserkers from his homeland arrived during the ten thousand years, then that God of Berserkers would have a chance to win in this choice that is not really a choice.

'However, if no God of Berserkers arrived during the ten thousand years... then he would take the place of the Berserkers in Yin Death Region and bring upon... a windstorm with which the Berserkers would rise to power.

'Then what... reason could it have made Lie Shan Xiu believe that there would only be one God of Berserkers from the land of Berserkers? What reason could have pushed him to leave this path for his descendants? There is no reason for this, but he still did it.' Su Ming closed his eyes, and the memory of the grief about Lie Shan Xiu's statue appeared in his head.

'Perhaps there are plenty of answers hidden within that grief.' Su Ming opened his eyes. He had already obtained his own answer. 'I will not compete against you, and neither will I search for you. I have my own path to take.'

Su Ming swung his arm and walked towards Elder Feng and the others. When he came over, the near one hundred Berserkers, including Elder Feng, stood up and looked at him with a complicated gaze. They were waiting for him to make his choice.

"I..." Su Ming looked at these Berserkers and at the old Elder Feng as well as Elder Yu. The moment he said that one word, his body suddenly froze, because he had suddenly thought of a possibility.

This possibility made his words come to an abrupt halt. His pupils constricted before he turned around slowly to look at Lie Shan Xiu's statue.

'Grief, hesitation, looking at the sky, contemplation... a choice that does not follow the conventions of logic. Are all of these... truly that simple...?

'The First God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu, stood here in the past for three years... Berserker Seed number one...'

As the near one hundred Berserkers waited for Su Ming to make his choice, he once again looked at Lie Shan Xiu's statue. He slowly walked towards it again and looked at it in rapt concentration.

He saw hesitation, grief, and contemplation, but when these three emotions were fused together, his heart trembled, because what he saw then was that Lie Shan Xiu's expression seemed to contain... a faint hint of anguish that was hidden incredibly deeply within him!

Su Ming remained silent as he stood beside Lie Shan Xiu's statue once again. He lifted his head and looked towards the sky. As time trickled by, seven days went past, and hesitation appeared on Su Ming's face.

This hesitation was one he intentionally brought about on himself. He was recollecting all his memories and fusing all instances when he hesitated in the past before having that emotion reflect on his face.

Another ten days passed, and in the mid of that hesitation, grief appeared. Once that wave of sadness fused together with the hesitation, Su Ming's expression looked incredibly complicated.

Another half a month went by. Besides hesitation and grief, a third emotion appeared on Su Ming's face. It was... contemplation.

Only at that moment did he lift his head. When he looked at the sky, his voice could be heard for the first time after he had remained silent for a little over a month.

"Yu Rou, tell me. What is the first word that comes to your mind when you look at my face now?"

When said that, Yu Rou, who had been accompanying him all this while silently standing by his side, quietly and elegantly looked at his face. After a moment, she said softly, "Anguish and conflict."

Su Min's heart trembled. His eyes might have played tricks with him previously, which was why he had asked Yu Rou to verify for him, and with it, he that the hint of anguish he saw on Lie Shan Xiu's face was not a figment of his imagination!

There was an expression of internal struggle within that anguish, but this expression was incredibly easy to understand. It could be understood as Lie Shan Xiu not wanting the competition between the Gods of Berserkers to occur, but he had to do so, which was why there was anguish and conflict within him.

However... there could also be another explanation to this. Perhaps there was another form of truth hidden within that back filled with anguish, and it was what Lie Shan Xiu had wanted to convey to him in a not so straightforward manner.

Su Ming fell silent. As his pupils constricted, he made sure his expression remained the same when he lifted his head to look at the sky.

'First God of Berserkers Lie Shan Xiu, what is it that you want to tell me? Let me see it.'

Su Ming continued looking at the sky as he allowed time to pass, allowed wind and rain to fall on him, and allowed the clouds in the sky to continue disappearing and reappearing ceaselessly as the world changed with the passage of time.

One day, two days, three days...

One month, two months, three months...

The near one hundred Berserkers behind him had also discovered this strange aspect, especially Elder Feng and Elder Yu. The both of them cast a glance at each other, and their expressions turned incredibly solemn.

Ever since the Duke of Crimson Flame had acknowledged Su Ming as his young master, he never let his side. At that moment, he stood by him, on guard against the people of Lie Shan Xiu. He would not allow anyone to be of a threat to Su Ming.

Yu Rou had always been an elegant person. Time continued passing, but she continued sitting quietly by the side as she looked at the sun rising and setting.

As for the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, the two of them had taken the forms of two big dogs. They had originally been lying about, but the bald crane had lost its patience and was able to convince the Abyss Dragon to run away with it a month ago. As of then, no one knew where they were, nor how the bald crane had managed to convince the dragon.

In the blink of an eye, half a year passed as Su Ming continued standing beside Lie Shan Xiu's statue in the mid of wind and rain. Even when the weather became cold and snow fell, he continued to stay unmoving, immersed in a state in which his mind was almost completely void of all thoughts as he looked at the sky and the clouds.

When winter slowly passed and spring arrived to allow all manner of lives to come back to life, the clouds in the sky slowly increased in number, and Su Ming's body suddenly shuddered.

He had been standing there for almost ten months, and only at that moment did he tremble. As he did so, the Berserkers behind him immediately cast their gazes on him.

In fact, Elder Feng even lifted his head to look at the sky, but all he saw was clouds. There was nothing else besides that.

Su Ming had his gaze trained on the sky. He could see clearly that at the instant the clouds in the sky intersected with each other, some changes occurred among them.

It was as if they were trying to show something, but in the end... there was nothing.

The shivers in his body gradually calmed down. He continued looking at the sky quietly, and time passed once again. In the blink of an eye... a little over a year passed, which meant that Su Ming had already stood beside Lie Shan Xiu's statue on the mountain for two full years.

During these two years, the Yu Family became the master of Black Water City and the strongest family in the planet, even though... they had no Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death in the family. Even so, they still managed to become one of the three greatest families in the planet.

During the course of these two years, Black Ink Planet organized plenty of auctions, and as people came and went, the planet bustled with activity. However, the area around Su Ming seemed to have been locked down since not a single person passed through during all that time.

It was as if this place... had turned into the forbidden grounds within Black Ink Planet!

The third year arrived, and it went by with spring, summer, autumn, and winter passing in sequence. When the sequence was over, it marked the third year that Su Ming had stood on the mountain!

On that day, Su Ming shuddered once again as the sun set. He moved with anguish and conflict on his face. He had been standing on the mountain and had never once blinked, just like what Lie Shan Xiu had done.

As of then, three full years had passed. He had not been able to see anything, but he had a feeling as if he had seen something. That feeling turned into the shivers when he closed his eyes.

At the instant he closed his eyes, all the movements of the clouds rising and falling he had seen for the past three years appeared in his mind like fleeting smoke. He seemed

to be seeing the same piece of sky in his head, but there were slight differences in terms of the changes in the clouds, and these slight differences were rapidly connected together in his head as they swiftly flashed through his memory...

They formed six words!

These six words had existed in the sky since the start, but three years were required to form them as the clouds in the sky continued changing!

There was only one method to see these six words, and that was by watching the sky intently, just like what Su Ming had done. His stare had been focused intently on the clouds, branding all their changes into his mind. But only at the instant he closed his eyes would the words appear.

"Divine Essence Star Ocean, save me..."

Su Ming's heart trembled and he opened his eyes. Needless to say, what the six words said was a plea for help that was hidden behind Lie Shan Xiu's back, which was filled with anguish and internal struggle!

This plea for help was clearly something that no one else was supposed to know. In fact, it could be said that no one could not know about it, or else Lie Shan Xiu would not have delivered his message in such a cryptic manner and spent three years to slowly change the clouds in the sky with his divine sense so the changes in the sky would form a message that would allow the person who lifted his head to look at the sky for three years to discover his cry for help.

It was a distress call that came from eight thousand years ago. As Su Ming's heart trembled, he gained a new understanding towards the competition between the Gods of Berserkers Lie Shan Xiu had mentioned.

"Before me, was there anyone else who came to this place and stood here for three years?" Su Ming suddenly asked and turned around to look at Elder Feng and the near one hundred Berserkers behind him.

"No." Elder Feng shook his head.

"Prepare a map of Divine Essence Star Ocean for me; the more comprehensive it is, the better."

Su Ming was silent for a moment after, then after a long while, he sighed softly and said, "I cannot ignore the First God of Berserkers' cry for help for no other reason than respect towards him for the glorious life he led."

"This isn't difficult. We have always had an incredibly detailed map of Divine Essence Star Ocean, but there are plenty of changes within that galaxy, so there are always

differences in the maps regarding that galaxy once every few hundred years. Still, Black Ink Auction, which is an auction held by various families working together once every few hundred of years will be held one month later. At that time, the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean will come, and they will have with them a map that is even more detailed and has the changes within Divine Essence Star Ocean that have occurred over the past hundreds of years," Elder Feng said in a low voice after he cast Su Ming a deep look.

"Black Ink Auction?" Su Ming's eyes sparkled. "Will the people from the forces of power keeping an eye over this place come here?"

"Since the past, the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds have sent someone to attend Black Ink Auction," Elder Feng answered.

"If Lie Shan Family's forces could discover the details of my bounty, then could they... find the list of those with incredibly great potential in the path of cultivation from the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds?" Su Ming asked languidly.

Chapter 895: Dao Kong

Elder Feng cast Su Ming a look, then turned his head around to look at Elder Yu, who was beside him.

"Very well. We will need about a month or so," Elder Yu said flatly. As he spoke, water vapor filled the air around him, bringing a haziness to the area around him.

"All members of Lie Shan Family, all of your manpower within Black Ink Planet will now come under the Fourth God of Berserkers' name. You will need to listen to my orders," Su Ming said calmly as he stood beside Lie Shan Xiu's statue and swept his gaze over the crowd. When his words left his mouth, the acknowledgement he had from the land of Berserkers in his soul and the power of worship of the Berserkers in the land of Berserkers spread out from his body.

This was the dignity of the God of Berserkers. It was an invisible power that could make all Berserkers' Qi tumble.

The bodies of the near one hundred Berserkers trembled and they lowered their heads towards Su Ming. Elder Feng and Elder Yu remained silent for a moment, then wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed towards Su Ming.

The voices of the people as they bowed together turned into one single voice that said, "We greet the God of Berserkers."

.....

One month swiftly passed. During it, Black Ink Planet was filled with a bustle of activity, since cultivators continuously arrived from the world outside. These people were mostly powerful warriors from Sinful Barren Lands, and they had naturally come to Black Ink Planet for Black Ink Auction, which was only held once every couple hundred years.

The Black Ink Auction was incredibly famous in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It was a large-scale auction in its truest sense, and every single time it was held, plenty of shocking treasures would appear.

The alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean would also send their people to the auction, and they would bring with them a large amount of strange items from the galaxy in exchange for necessities as well as treasures and cultivation methods that would only appear in the four Great True Worlds.

The four Great True Worlds also placed an incredible amount of importance on Black Ink Planet's auction. Every single time it was held, plenty of True Guards would come. In fact, there would even be representatives from each True World who would come to the planet to trade.

Due to far too many cultivators arriving in the planet, preventing chaos became an incredibly great task. It would be taken by a group of guards formed by the powerful warriors from each family in the planet, and they made sure that no battles occurred during the auction.

In fact, the Protection Rune in Black Ink Planet would also be fully activated during the entire process. Once any sign of disturbance appeared, the Rune would immediately destroy the cause of the disturbance.

Thankfully, the auction had been held plenty of times in the past, so everything progressed in an impeccable and orderly manner.

Su Ming sat in a palace Yu Family had built in Black Water City after it became its owner. He sat at a spot from which he could see everything that was happening in the city. The thirteen Progenitors from the Yu Family stood behind him respectfully.

There was a jade slip placed in front of Su Ming.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu stood beside him respectfully. That respect came from the bottom of his heart while he waited for Su Ming's orders.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu had delivered the jade slip to Su Ming, and on it were the names of the prodigies from the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds. In fact, detailed descriptions of those who might possibly come to Black Ink Planet to participate in the auction were also recorded inside.

Su Ming held onto the jade slip with a calm look on his face. Not a single change of expression could be detected on him, even if the very first name he saw on that jade slip... was Ye Wang !

'Ye Wang, the person with the strongest potential over the course of numerous years in True Morning Dao World, because of which Morning Dao Sect has placed an incredible amount of importance on him. He's known as the person who has the highest possibility of heading into Plane Kalpa Realm among the cultivators of his generation.

'He's also Heng Kong Zi's successor disciple, who is one of the Grand Sect Elders in Morning Dao Sect. Ye Wang had went with Dao Kong, a direct descent of Dao Chen, into the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

'There is a high possibility that this person will come to Black Ink Planet.'

'Dao Kong, a direct descendant of True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect. His potential in cultivation is incredibly shocking, and he can be considered to be among the top ten in terms of creating his own force of power among the direct descendants of Morning Dao Sect.

'This person is cautious in his actions, but he's fierce and ambitious. Most of the cultivators he gathers to his side are strong, and he means to bring Ye Wang to his side. Ye Wang had come to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence because Dao Kong had manipulated things so that it would happen this way.

Most of Dao Kong's followers cannot come to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, which is why he is at his weakest when he is here. However, he is bound to still have powerful warriors protecting him, and if it wasn't because this person had only been walking down the path of cultivation for a short period of time, he would have become one of the top three direct descendants of Dao Chen who have reached Ascendant Realm. Before Ye Wang appeared, he was known as the person with the best potential in Morning Dao Sect.

'This person will definitely come to Black Ink Planet!'

Su Ming scanned through all the names on the jade slip with his Atman. When he looked through all of them once, he placed his attention on Ye Wang and Dao Kong. After a long while, he placed his full concentration on information about Dao Kong.

'Dao Kong...' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes before he retrieved his Atman. Then, he slowly narrowed his eyes.

When he made his decision to search for the First God of Berserkers in Divine Essence Star Ocean, Su Ming had already decided to search for his third clone as soon as possible. He needed clone who could gather up his cultivation base so that his level of cultivation could begin to rise.

In fact, Su Ming was confident that once he found that clone, his cultivation base would be able to rise abruptly. He would then be able to reach World Plane Realm from his awkward state of being stuck in Heaven Cultivation Realm.

When his three clones cooperated with each other, there was even a possibility that he could have his clone which focused on cultivation base reach the middle stage of World Plane Realm. At that time, with Su Ming's true strength, he would be able to gain an upper hand against those in the later stage of World Plane Realm even without bringing out his Ecang clone.

After all, the Qi within the physical body of his clone which practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows whole had already reached the later stage of World Plane Realm. Because of this, if his cultivation base reached the middle stage of World Plane Realm, he would have earned the right to enter Divine Essence Star Ocean.

'If everything goes smoothly, then with the treasure that is Peace Arrives when the Elephant is Here, I will have the power to protect myself even if I run into those in Lunar Kalpa Realm.'

A freezing glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

He chose Dao Kong because he harbored a grudge against Morning Dao Sect, while the memory of Ye Wang's gaze filled with determination as he refused to admit defeat while he was in Wind Steam Tribe still remained in his mind.

Su Ming looked at Lie Shan Kang Jiu and said in a low voice, "Have all the manpower of Lie Shan Family in Black Ink Planet keep close watch over Dao Kong. If he comes here I want to know everything about it."

Lie Shan Kang Jiu's expression grew stern. Once he voiced his obedience, he bade his farewell and left.

Once he left, Su Ming's orders spread through all the members of Black Ink Dao within all families in a discreet manner. An invisible net spread out in Black Ink Planet, and it was waiting... for Dao Kong to arrive.

At that moment, there were gigantic longships within the galaxy beyond Black Ink Planet. They were moving without any sound and were heading swiftly towards the auction. Judging by their speed, they would be able to enter Black Ink Planet's territory in a couple more breaths.

Dao Kong sat on a big black chair while dressed in a Sacred Constellation Robe. He had a wine cup in his hand, and while looking at the stars, he would occasionally take a sip from it. His expression was incredibly calm, and only a hint of a bright light occasionally shining in his eyes revealed his extraordinary bearing.

He looked incredibly handsome, and the Sacred Constellation Robe only served to make him look like a dragon amid people.

There were nine old men standing behind him quietly. These nine old men all had their eyes shut, but there were shocking waves of power spreading out from within and around their bodies.

"So you're saying that our prodigy Ye Wang left on his own?" Dao Kong smiled and released his grip around the wine cup. It plunged down towards the ground, but before it could crash down, a pearly white hand suddenly reached out from empty space and seized it.

Appearing along with that hand was an incredibly alluring body, and it was followed by an incredibly beautiful and young married woman. That woman knelt down beside Dao Kong when she grabbed the wine cup, then she smiled coquettishly at him.

"He left alone three days ago," a cold voice said coolly from the area in front of Dao Kong and that woman. An indistinct figure could be seen there. That person's face could not be seen clearly, but based on the form, it could be deduced that the person was a woman.

"Very well. During the past thousand something years, he has constantly refused to become my follower. The time for our return is almost up. Then... since he can't become my follower, I won't allow any of my other family members to be able to take him in either. Let's have him... run into an accident in Black Ink Planet," Dao Kong said softly and lifted his right hand to caress the coquettish woman's chin.

"I will only ensure your safety and will not help you do that sort of thing," the indistinct person said flatly. There was a hint of derision in her voice and a lack of embarrassment for speaking in such a manner towards Dao Kong, showing her complete lack of respect towards him.

The young man seemed to be used to the woman speaking to him in such a manner. He only smiled faintly and looked towards the spot where she was.

"Do not forget that you are a member of the Phoenix Sect and your Progenitor gave you to me for a wife."

"Do not forget that Phoenix Sect will only carry out the tradition when you reach Plane Kalpa Realm," the woman stated flatly. There was a layer of distortions in the place where she was, and she no longer bothered herself with Dao Kong, turning around to leave.

A chuckle escaped Dao Kong's lips. He held the chin of the woman beside him and looked at her beautiful face, especially her pointy ears, then gently pinched them.

The woman winced in pain, but she did not dare to show a single hint of it. As Dao Kong increased the strength of his pinch, tears fell from the woman's eyes.

"You came from the Phoenix Sect as well. Have you ever met their Sacred Lady Bai Feng?" he asked in a light tone.

The woman bit her bottom lip and shook her head.

"Understandable. When you betrayed the Phoenix Sect, Bai Feng had participated in the secret plan, so it's only natural that you didn't see her." Dao Kong smiled faintly.

"I have never met her before, either. There are two Sacred Ladies in Phoenix Sect. One of them is Bai Feng, and the other is my wife, Xu Hui. It's a pity that Xu Hui constantly has her face hidden, but sooner or later, I will be able to see her. The ancient inheritance from Phoenix Sect will also belong to me." Dao Kong released the woman's ears and suddenly slapped her, sending her a hundred something feet away.

"Get lost!"

The woman lowered her head, and her body slowly disappeared into the distance.

The area immediately fell silent. The expressions of the nine old men behind Dao Kong remained as impassive as ever. In fact, they did not even open their eyes, as if they were already used to Dao Kong's temperamental actions.

'Ye Wang... since you don't know how to appreciate what is good for you, then... don't blame me for being ruthless.' Dao Kong's expression became freezing cold, and he closed his eyes. 'I will complete the Progenitor's request in Black Ink Auction, which is to obtain enough resources by offering a spot to head to True Morning Dao World. Once I do this, it'll be fine even if Ye Wang dies.'

Chapter 896: Arrival

Several days later, the longships that belonged to Dao Kong gradually entered Black Ink Planet's territory. Dao Kong walked out of his room and stood at the bow of the ship with his hands behind his back and his hair over his shoulders. His Sacred Constellation Robe shone with a light that was akin to the one emitted by rotating stars.

Because of it, Dao Kong looked incredibly graceful at that moment. His handsome face filled with determination gave him a masculine beauty, and it had to be said that his current appearance was very fitting to his status.

It was as if a large amount of kismet in the universe had gathered on his body, and he had the fortune to use quite a large portion of it, or else why would he be born as a

direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect, obtain a potential that was second to no one beside Ye Wang, and have an appearance that would make all those who saw him want to praise him?

As he stood at the bow of the ship, the nine old men stood behind him like shadows, but they had their eyes shut. However, with the help of starlight, a scene that could not be seen when they were in the room showed up. These nine old men had their eyes shut... because they had been sewn tightly by thin threads!

They looked like dolls whose eyes had been sewn shut.

"Black Ink Planet..."

Dao Kong smiled faintly as he looked at the indistinct planet in the distance. Slight anticipation grew in his heart, since this would be his final stop in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Once the auction ended, he would leave; he would no longer need to stay around here to keep an eye over this place. Instead, he could use the exit and head back to True Morning Dao World.

By his side was the young married woman with pointy ears and a coquettish appearance. She stood there quietly with blank eyes. There was not a hint of emotion in them, and she looked like a puppet as well.

There was a collar around her neck with nineteen runic symbols on it. They were branded into the collar and appeared as bumps. Occasionally, they would shine, spreading out a freezing chill that could cause people's hearts to freeze.

Longships moved through the galaxy like fish in water, stirring up layers of ripples around them as they got increasingly closer to Black Ink Planet. Once they had traveled through the area that belonged to Black Ink Planet for about the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, a sharp whistle rose in front of them.

Along with that whistling sound came a pride of strange, lion-like beasts with two heads. As they roared, they traveled forward in a group that consisted of hundreds of them.

A cultivator could be found sitting on each of the creature's backs. These cultivators were dressed similarly and their eyes shone with brilliant light, creating a stark contrast against the thin and pathetic physiques of the other people outside Blank Ink Planet in Sinful Barren Lands.

They were alert and full of energy, but showed not a single hint of respect towards the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping an eye over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Instead, they used a calm attitude to greet all those who came to the planet.

"Who goes there? Say your name!"

"How preposterous! We are the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds! How dare you criminals not bow and worship us?!" The arrogance contained in this voice was incredibly great, and a cold snort soon followed from one of the longships.

The cultivators from Black Ink Planet smiled to each other when they heard these words, but their expressions soon became steely cold. Every single time they held Black Ink Auction, these sort of ignorant fools would appear. This was related to their experience in being True Guards. After all, around the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, the cultivators in all planets besides Black Ink Planet and Divine Essence Star Ocean were incredibly respectful when they saw them.

With the system of the True Guards from the four Great True Worlds changing shifts, it was not surprising for those not knowing the rules to appear.

The leader of the cultivators from Black Ink Planet was an old man. He rolled his eyes before he speaking in a cold voice, "Bring out your invitations. We are in charge of the first inspection. If you do not have an invitation... then we will kill you as we would any invaders!"

"You're just mere cultivators of Black Ink..." The cultivator who had snorted coldly just then in his longship was about to continue speaking, but his words were swiftly cut short. Immediately after, a gentle voice came from the longships, and an old man with a kindly and gentle face walked out.

"My subordinate has been ignorant. Fellow Daoists from Black Ink Planet, I hope that you will not mind. We are from True Morning Dao World, and in response to the invitation for Black Ink Auction, we have come forth to attend the auction. This is our invitation." The old man brought out a jade slip from his bosom with a smile before he let go of his grip.

The jade slip immediately charged towards the cultivators from Black Ink Planet. Once the old man who stood at the head caught it, he cast it a few scrutinizing glances before returning it and leading the hundreds of cultivators behind him to separate into two dies so as to make way for the group.

The old man with the kind and gentle face wrapped his fist in his palm as thanks towards the people before he returned to his longship with a smile on his face. Soon, Dao Kong's vast fleet of longships headed into the distance through the path the cultivators from Black Ink Planet had cleared for them.

"Immediately notify our Progenitor that the people from True Morning Dao World arrived. By the looks of it, Dao Kong should be among them as well, but we don't know the details." The old man leading the group of cultivators from Black Ink Planet narrowed his eyes. As a barely noticeable glint appeared in them, he sent a thought to the cultivator standing next to him.

That cultivator immediately moved and turned into a long arc that disappeared without a trace.

After a moment, in Black Ink Planet, Lie Shan Kang Jiu once again arrived in the room in which Su Ming stayed. He stopped before him respectfully and bowed down.

"My Lord, the group from True Morning Dao World has arrived. They are currently beyond Black Ink Planet and are going through all the layers of inspection. We have already verified that Dao Kong is among one of the longships.

"He has nine old men beside him, and they all have outstanding power. They should be at the peak of the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and judging by their looks, they seem to be skilled in coordinating their attacks. They should have a Rune with them.

"Besides these nine people, Dao Kong also brought three thousand other cultivators. Each of them has outstanding power... and they should all be warriors who do not fear death.

"Also, according to our investigations, Dao Kong has run into two incredibly perilous situations over the one thousand something years he was in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. These dangers should have come from other True Worlds, and one of them was something that would be impossible to survive through if he was not in the later stage of World Plane Realm, while the other would have surely brought death to all who were not above Lunar Kalpa Realm.

"However, during both times, he managed to survive without getting injured, hence we suspect that there is a cultivator who is at the very least in Lunar Kalpa Realm hidden by his side.

"As for Ye Wang, who you have asked us to pay attention to, he came alone to Black Ink Planet yesterday and is staying in Worldly Star City at the moment. All his actions are monitored by us," Lie Shan Kang Jiu reported in a low voice. Once he finished speaking, he hesitated for moment, as if he wanted to say something else, but then decided not to continue.

Su Ming was meditating with his eyes closed. Once he finished listening to Lie Shan Kang Jiu's words, he slowly opened his eyes. His gaze was profound, preventing others from telling what he felt at the moment.

"Continue," he said flatly.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu smiled awkwardly and lowered his head, then quickly said, "Um... My Lord, those two pets of yours... the black and yellow dogs? I've also investigated them. They are currently also in Worldly Star City, and they got themselves an illustrated book from some place. There are plenty of weird... things... drawn in there. Also, the yellow dog is skilled in transformation. He has turned himself into an old man.

"He took that illustrated book and has been proclaiming all over the place that the items in the book are the items that will be put on auction. Quite a large number of these have been sold off during the past half a year." Lie Shan Kang Jiu smiled wryly and brought out an illustrated book from his bosom and placed it before Su Ming respectfully.

Su Ming picked up the book and flipped through it. As he did so, a frown gradually appeared between his brows. Once he finished flipping through the book, he let out a cold harrumph and placed the book by his side. Those pictures were not the items that were going to be put on auction, since some of them... were Su Ming's own Enchanted Treasures!

However, the information and descriptions in the book were mostly of no relevance to the items themselves. In fact, there were even some illustrations of Enchanted Treasures that once belonged to the enemies Su Ming had fought against.

"That was half a year ago. What did they do before that?" Su Ming lifted his head and cast a glance at Lie Shan Kang Jiu.

"This is... Ahem. I have never seen such intelligent pets in my life. Half a year ago... they became Hua Family's guests in Worldly Star City.

"A year ago, they built an auction hall in Ink Kirin City.

"Eighteen months ago, they... became friends with Li Long... which is the dragon in Black Water City's swamp, and took away with them some of its scales.

"Two years ago, several small families in Black Ink Planet... worked together to kill them...

"Thirty months ago, they organized a formal marriage interview. The yellow dog turned into... an incredibly beautiful woman... and then they blended themselves into several small families, and with all sorts of... despicable methods, they looted an endless amount of crystals...

"Three years ago, when they had just left your side, they found... a small crystal mine that belonged to a small family."

Su Ming was stunned as he listened to all the exploits. As Lie Shan Kang Jiu continued recounting the tale, he could not help but have the non-malicious envy and admiration in his heart seep into his words.

"In fact, once Elder Feng learned about this, he let out a long sigh and said that if they had been in Black Ink Planet before us, then they might have become Black Ink Planet's true masters by now." When Lie Shan Kang Jiu said these words, he cast Su Ming an odd look.

Su Ming remained silent.

After some time, he let out a dry cough and said, "Make arrangements for Dao Kong to enter Black Water City, and we will act according to plan."

"Understood!" Lie Shan Kang Jiu immediately bowed to him, then got up and left.

Once Lie Shan Kang Jiu left, Su Ming's room immediately fell silent, and his expression instantly turned dark. He picked up the illustration book and looked at it carefully. When he thought of Lie Shan Kang Jiu talking about the things that the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon had caused during the past three years, he could not help but smile wryly in resignation.

Yu Rou was by his side. For the first time since she followed Su Ming, her elegant expression changed. She covered her mouth as if she was trying to hold back her laughter, but in the end, her body started quivering uncontrollably and her laughter echoed in the air.

"Young master, it is said that pets are like their masters. I wonder if this is true for you." Yu Rou chuckled softly and cast Su Ming a glance. This was the first time she saw him smiling wryly in resignation.

"That big yellow dog of mine should have the figures of a number of women in its memories, but based on what I understand of it, those figures from the distant past should have already become faded images in its head. Then whose form do you think it would have taken for that marriage interview?" Su Ming asked faintly.

Once those words left his mouth, Yu Rou's expression changed, and a murderous aura instantly appeared in her beautiful eyes.

Su Ming stood up and swung his arm to adjust his sleeves before he walked towards the door. The auction was just around the corner, and the plan was going to be set in motion at any moment. Before that, he would go and check on the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon, then would go to Worldly Star Planet... to see an old friend of his.

'Ye Wang...'

Chapter 897: The Two Fiends: the Crane and the Black

Worldly Star Planet was a city with a beautiful name. It would usually cause people to think of a region that was akin to a starry sky the first time they heard of the city.

Yet in truth this was a desert.

This so-called city was really just an oasis in the desert, a place with fresh water surrounded by tents.

This was Worldly Star City during the day, a desert whose end could not be seen. The oases which looked like embellishments made it seem as if the desert still had some form of life. Quite a large number of cultivators could be seen meditating or moving in and out of the tents.

This did not seem like a city, but was more like a gigantic and disorderly market.

The scorching sun sent heat to the ground, and even the sand was blazing hot. In this vast land, no end could be seen so no one could feel boxed in, but if they stared into the distance for a prolonged period of time, they would still become agitated.

Because of this, Worldly Star City was also commonly known as the City of Frustration during the day.

However, when night fell, everything in the area would become like a mirage. Every little thing would be different, and the change was so great that the person who saw it for the first time would be left greatly astonished.

When it was night, the sky was bright with brilliant starlight. After being trapped in heat for an entire day, the sand looked like it had melted, revealing large stones that stood in an orderly manner on the ground.

There was also a watery blue screen that looked like an illusion spread over the land. Anyone who stood on it would feel a refreshing sensation under their feet, as if they were stepping on fresh water.

The tents shone with a light that gave the area a quiet and serene feel, as if the light from the sky had gathered on the ground and turned into solid, triangular structures. At the top of the tents were pillars of light that rose into the sky, and the number of tents corresponded with the number of light pillars.

The pillars of light looked like they were connected to the sky. As they intersected with each other, they formed silver streams that connected them together as well as the sky and earth. These silver streams functioned as lines that formed illusory palaces in the dark sky.

There were endless palaces that looked like they were illusions but also looked incredibly real. If someone walked over and touched them with their hands or used their divine senses to perceive them, they would find that the palaces really existed.

In this seemingly boundless desert, when night arrived, walls would appear out of nowhere and surround the area. It would seem as if the place had turned into... a city which existed in the mortal world and was home to Emperors.

If anyone looked from the sky, they would find that the silver streams and palaces formed an incredibly beautiful picture. That picture was like the sky that could only exist in heaven, and was beautiful without equal.

Those who looked from the sky would find themselves looking at the same sight as those who looked from the ground. As the streams of light intersected with each other, they formed a picture in which the stars and the world existed in the same level and formed the city that was known as Worldly Star City.

During the night, Worldly Star City was incredibly lively. Plenty of cultivators came and went all around, and this city could be said to even be a little more prosperous than Black Water City. Right then, since Black Ink Auction was just around the corner, the number of cultivators present had also increased.

Su Ming walked amid the crowd. Behind him was Yu Rou, who followed him with the veil covering her features. Her face remained cold and aloof all along the way to the city, but the murderous aura in her eyes was incredibly great. Every single time she thought of the big yellow dog changing into her appearance and marrying someone, even she who was always quiet and elegant could not help but pull her hair out in frustration.

If Su Ming had not been around, she would have sent her divine sense outwards a long time ago to search for the two dogs at any cost.

"Have you heard about it? The Dual Fiends, the Crane and the Black have appeared again!"

As the two of them walked forward, Su Ming's expression suddenly changed. He turned his head and looked into the distance. There was an inn in that direction, and there was a clamor coming from there. Inside the establishment there was a table, and around it were three cultivators who were talking to each other with enraged expressions.

"Damn it, do you mean that big yellow dog and the woman who called herself 'Grandpa Crane'?"

"That's right! Who else could I be talking about?! That woman who calls herself Grandpa Crane is definitely an androgynous human, or else why would she call herself Grandpa Crane? She was the one who brought that despicable yellow dog with her in the past, and several dozens of small families were enraged because of them."

"Eh? Brother Wang, I remember that you also attended that marriage interview, didn't you?"

"Don't ever mention it again! That woman is my mortal enemy!"

"But honestly speaking, that woman does indeed have an incredibly beautiful face. I saw her once. If she wasn't that beautiful, it would have been impossible for the direct descendants of several dozen families to go mad for her. It's said that there were even a few of them who did everything they could to see her up close and become familiar with her."

"Hmph, your news is outdated. Based on what I know, several people indeed saw her and became close to her, and after that they were all completely head over heels for her, or else why would the Dual Fiends have been able to take away so many crystals?"

"I saw that woman before as well. She is definitely a woman of absolute beauty. She's so beautiful, so why is she doing things like this? She could just go to any middle-tier family, and all of them would take her in. In fact, even the greatest families here would value such a gorgeous woman highly. If she practiced Seduction Arts, she would definitely become incredibly powerful."

As Su Ming listened, his expression became strange, and he glanced at Yu Rou sideways. At that moment, she was already so angry that she was trembling, and the murderous aura in her eyes had become incredibly thick. In fact, the area around her was now freezing cold.

She took a swift step forward and turned into a wisp of green smoke that appeared in the inn. Su Ming smiled wryly, but did not stop her.

He saw Yu Rou stepping into the inn, and at the instant she moved in, the place instantly turned cold, so she immediately attracted everyone's attention.

When the people saw Yu Rou, who still had a veil over her face, they were stunned for a moment, but some of them soon sported drastic changes to their expressions. In fact, some of them even stood up swiftly to stare intently at her with slight uncertainty on their faces.

It was especially so for the three people who had been talking among themselves just moments ago. Their expressions were slowly twisting as they stared at her. A burst of hatred that could burn the sky rose up swiftly. However, it was suppressed within as it turned into a hint of uncertainty.

Yu Rou looked at the people's expressions around her and immediately felt great dismay. She had originally harbored a hint of doubt in her heart that it might not be her they were talking about, but most of it had disappeared at that moment. Yet she was still slightly unwilling to accept reality, which was why she decided to lift her veil right in front of the crowd.

When she revealed her beautiful face and all the people saw it, enraged roars rose up like a windstorm in the inn.

"The Dual Fiends, the Crane and the Black!"

"It's the Dual Fiend! Damn it! How dare you appear here?! Return to me my crystals!"

"Those are my crystals! I was prepared to buy an Enchanted Treasures with those crystals! Y-y-you... I will not rest until you die!!"

Crazed roars echoed in the air, and there were quite a large number of cultivators who rushed out to attack her. The murderous aura in Yu Rou's eye instantly reached its strongest. She no longer had a single hint of doubt within her; that damned yellow dog had taken her appearance.

In fact, even the waiter in the inn had bloodshot eyes when he saw her. He brought an axe from some place and charged towards her while growling, "Damn it, it's you! You're the one who cheated me off my crystals!"

When Yu Rou saw the cultivators rushing towards her, she lifted her hand and swung it outwards. All the cultivators' bodies in the inn froze then tumbled backwards. Banging sounds echoed in the air, and all the cultivators coughed up blood as they fell back... and this was after Yu Rou had forced down her killing intent. With a cold harrumph, she turned around and walked out of the inn before disappearing without a trace.

In fact, she did not even bother about Su Ming. Instead, once she walked out of the inn, she immediately spread her divine sense outwards, sweeping through the entire Worldly Star City in search for the two dogs whom she could not wait to kill one thousand times.

Su Ming smiled wryly and shook his head. He saw Yu Rou scanning the entire city with her divine sense for a moment, then moving towards the distance in the form of a long arc with murderous aura raging around her. Once he saw this, he sighed and followed after her.

In a corner of Worldly Star City was an old man putting on a solemn air. As he stroked his beard, he looked at the two middle-aged men before him with a grin on his face.

"Ahem, my fellow Daoists, I can only let you see the first three pages in the illustrated book. If you want to take the entire thing with you, then you will need to pay me five hundred crystals," the old man said in a slow and calm manner.

There was a big yellow dog lying sprawled by his feet, and it was glaring at the two middle-aged men. Occasionally, it would let out a threatening low growl, as if it wanted to rush forward to rip apart the two men. Every single time its anger was about to reach its most ferocious state, the old man would kick it, and the yellow dog's rage would diminish slightly.

After a moment, the two middle-aged men took the illustrated book and left, and the old man counted the crystals once again. A smug expression appeared on his face, then he

lowered his head and said to the yellow dog, "I've already told you plenty of times that you should only be fierce when you need to, and when you shouldn't be fierce, you must be gentle. Y-y-you... ah, fine. This time, I'll take away a third of your profits."

"How dare you?!" The big yellow dog immediately stood up like a man and glared at the old man fiercely.

The old man immediately put a smile on his face and walked forward to hug the yellow dog.

"Haha! Us dudes... Ack, don't bite me! Fine, the both of us, okay? The both of us... The both of us can settle this easily among ourselves. I won't cut your profits, alright?" The old man swung his arm over the dog's shoulder, and a thick, uncouth air immediately appeared around its body.

"I'm telling you, we have to occasionally show up as the Dual Fiends: the Crane and the Black. Only then will we continue to be popular. This identity is very good for us, you know? The more popular we are, the more shock we will create whenever we go out." The old man cackled in a low voice and walked away with the yellow dog.

Yet he only took a couple steps when his body suddenly trembled, and he quickly cast a sideways glance at the yellow dog. When he saw that the yellow dog still looked the same as usual, various thoughts immediately raced in its head.

'Its cultivation base has been damaged badly, and it's normal that it didn't manage to notice it.'

"Ahem, Big Brother Abyss Dragon?" The old man immediately lowered his back, making it seem as if the dog was his superior.

The yellow dog was taken aback by this scene.

The old man bent his back even more, and with an obsequious look, he started saying in a submissive and soft-spoken manner, "Honestly, I have always had a question in my mind. Big Brother Abyss Dragon, you see, I've always been very cautious and attentive in my work when I was with you during the past three years, so why don't you tell me something?"

Before the yellow dog could speak, the old man continued, "About that... why did you force me to become the beautiful, gentle, kind, unparalleled, adorable Big Sister Yu Rou who has my utmost respect from the bottom of my heart and whom I think is a trillion times more brilliant than that Su Ming?"

"You must know that I have always regretted this in the depths of my heart for the past three years. In fact, it's something that's been tormenting me. I-I didn't want to turn into her, but you... why did you force me to change into her?" When finished, the old man

crouched down and wrapped his hands around his head before he started crying in misery.

The yellow dog was stunned speechless.

At that moment, a chilling air filled the remote area, and within it a voice could be heard. It sounded like a volcano about to erupt.

"Dual Fiends!"

Chapter 898: Old Friend

The bald crane shuddered, and it wept even more forlornly. As it wept, it began shouting and screaming loudly.

"Big brother Abyss Dragon, y-y-you... you knew that I had lived a bitter life during the past three years! I always felt that I had let Big Sister Yu Rou down, so why did you have to force me?!"

"I know that your master is Yu Xuan, and she has an ambiguous relationship with Su Ming, that's why you found Big Sister Yu Rou disagreeable. With this in mind, you forced pitiful old me to listen to your words, but I... but I didn't want this to happen. I remember now, you changed in Big Sister Yu Rou as well..."

If the yellow dog still did not understand what was going on, then it would have wasted all it had experienced in its life. It might be heavily injured and not as cunning and quick-witted as the bald crane, but how could it not understand that the damned bald crane was pushing all the responsibility on it?

Especially when that chilling and sinister voice was still echoing in the air? There was even a woman walking towards them threateningly with a monstrous murderous aura.

"Damn you, bald crane!" the yellow dog roared in anger and kicked the bald crane, who let out a shrill scream of pain and fell backwards as it coughed up a huge mouthful of blood. When it fell on the ground, it struggled a few times, like it was about to breathe its last. Then, it turned its head with great effort to look at the woman walking towards them.

"Big Sister... Yu... Rou... I'm... sorry..." Once it finished speaking, its eyes rolled back, and it stopped moving.

"I'll fight you to the bitter end!"

The big yellow dog's face was filled with grief, and as if it had gone mad, its body transformed, and it turned into an Abyss Dragon that was several times smaller than its regular size. However, there were numerous wounds on its body, and it did not even have a Dragon Tendon, so it exuded a miserable air even after it had transformed back.

In fact, there were even some wounds on its body that started bleeding because they had been torn apart by the dragon's agitation. This appearance was enough to make all people's expressions change. The dragon rushed forward and charged towards Yu Rou, but when it was in the air, it suddenly started laughing brokenly. Blood gushed out from many of its wounds at the same time, and its body plunged down from the air. When it fell on the ground, it coughed up a lot of blood.

"Master, you told me to flee before you fell asleep and ordered me to not change into an Abyss Dragon again, because I have been wounded too badly. If I changed back, I would surely die. I listened to you and changed into a yellow dog.

"But now, since I cannot escape death, then I will die as an Abyss Dragon. Even if I die, I will be an Abyss Dragon of the world!" In its anguish, the Abyss Dragon trembled, and the aura of death instantly filled its body. It started swiftly rotting away, and then, the dragon closed its eyes and breathed its last.

Yu Rou, who was seething with monstrous anger and murderous aura from her desire to kill the two fiends, paused in her footsteps. Stunned, she looked at the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon with a dumbfounded gaze.

This scene was completely out of her expectations. She had not thought that everything would end in such a manner. In fact, she was a little unclear as to who exactly had taken her form. She had very clearly heard that the yellow dog was skilled in transformation, but based on what she saw right then, the yellow dog seemed to be very honest and well-behaved...

With her level of cultivation, she could tell with just one glance that the Abyss Dragon had truly died. Its body and soul had been destroyed because it had been injured too badly, and when the dragon returned to its real form, it could no longer bear with the wounds and died.

This was real. It was not fake.

The density of the aura of death and the decay on its body made Yu Rou slightly unable to think. In a daze, she turned her gaze towards the bald crane, which had entered an even more advanced stage of death.

She could not help but recall the bald crane's words before it died, the words of regret that sounded incomparably sincere and exuded an honest repentance. They left her in a daze.

The Abyss Dragon's dignified death seeking act also left Yu Rou slightly envious of the its master.

"How could... How could this be?"

Yu Rou had brought with her rage and murderous aura, but now, all those emotions had turned into something she couldn't describe. In silence, she stood where she was for a long time before sighing, then turning around and leaving.

When she left, the Abyss Dragon and the bald crane's carcasses continued decaying, as if the endless passage of time had increased its flow by several times for a short amount of time at the moment they died.

Su Ming walked out from the darkness and stood beside the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon's carcasses, then sighed.

Yu Rou might have outstanding power and had lived for a long time... but her experiences in life could not compare to Su Ming's. The ups and downs she experienced in her life were also something that she could not hope to compare to his struggles.

Besides... she did not understand the bald crane.

Su Ming, however, did, and so much so that this understanding towards the crane had already been etched into his soul. He looked at the two carcasses on the ground and shook his head.

"Quite a realistic performance..." He smiled wryly, then turned around and left.

At the same time, two middle-aged men wearing straw hats and long robes strode around through another corner of Worldly Star City.

If anyone looked at the faces underneath the straw hats, they would find that one of them had an uncouth look, while the other had an incredibly dignified expression on his face, but in the depths of that dignified expression was a hint of an uncouth expression that corrupted that dignified look.

"Heh heh, isn't the great Grandpa Crane amazing?"

"You're amazing!"

"Isn't the great Grandpa Crane awesome?"

"You're awesome!"

"Haha! That lassie Yu Rou didn't expect that we've thought about this when we pretended to be her in the past. Heh heh, I threw her off! My plan will be called 'Throwing Yu Rou Off'!

"One of the three scales our boss Li Long gave us can hide our presence so that we won't be discovered, while the other two can turn into our clones. Unless the person's level of cultivation surpasses our boss Li Long's, then it would be impossible for them to notice us.

"Heh heh, I'm smart, right? Let me tell you, we had to occasionally show up as the Dual Fiends because of this day. Look, the matter is settled now, isn't it?"

"But baldy, I've been meaning to ask you this. Why are we known as the Dual Fiends: the Crane and the Black? It should be the Dual Fiends: the Crane and the Yellow, right?"

"Ahem, let's not talk about this for now. Xiao Huang, you reacted a little too slowly just then. When I addressed you as Big Brother Abyss Dragon, you were stunned for a moment. Even though you were supposed to be stunned based on what we've rehearsed, you've been stunned for too long. It was too fake!

"Also, I remember that the final 'I'll fight you to the bitter end' wasn't in the rehearsal. Y-y-you... Do you know that improvising is really dangerous?!

"Oh well, based on our agreement in the past, I helped you ruin her reputation. Now, you have to work together with me and give me all your crystals. You also promised me that all your treasures in the Emperor of Abyss' True World will be mine."

The two middle-aged men were naturally the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon. The bald crane's Transformation Art was strong enough to transform the Abyss Dragon into all sorts of shapes. At that moment, as the two of them mumbled to each other, they walked into the distance.

However, in the mid of their excitement, they did not notice that Su Ming was watching them from the distance with a wry smile on his face.

In the dark night when the stars and moon hung high in the sky, the bald crane and the Abyss Dragon left. Yu Rou, too, left to an unknown direction, bringing with her all her complicated emotions. Su Ming was by himself now, only accompanied by the Duke of Crimson Flame, who had turned into a totem on his arm.

He shook his head and turned around, walking unhurriedly through the silver streams of Worldly Star City. Occasionally, some cultivators would pass by him. There would always be some who would lower their heads when they saw him and put on barely noticeable expressions of respect. Some of these people were members of the Lie

Shan Family, and some of them were people who had affiliated themselves to Berserkers.

They might not know Su Ming, but they could sense the vague mighty pressure aimed towards Berserkers coming from him. Besides, due to Su Ming's status, he was secretly protected by members of the Lie Shan Family and other Berserkers wherever he went in Black Ink Planet.

These people were in all corners of Worldly Star Planet.

In fact, the Hua Family within Worldly Star Planet was also under strict surveillance. They had obtained some hints that left their Progenitor so shocked that he came out from isolation to personally issue an order to all members of his family that they were forbidden from venturing outside. The powerful warriors within the family then were on constant alert, telling all the guests within the Hua Family to not go out of their rooms on that night.

The lesson of Tai Ci Family had made them... unwilling to provoke any people they couldn't afford to provoke or offend anyone they should not offend due to some accident.

After the time it takes for two incense sticks to burn, a man walked towards Su Ming. He paused for an instant when he was beside Su Ming and respectfully handed him a jade slip. There was a hint of a zealous look in his eyes, but just as he was about to bid his farewell and leave...

Su Ming said faintly, "I like peace and quiet."

The man immediately voiced his obedience and left respectfully.

Su Ming cast his gaze on the jade slip, reading the mark of where Ye Wang was staying at that moment. Once Su Ming cast a glance at it, he crushed the jade slip and walked slowly towards his lodgings.

Gradually, the number of cultivators before him decreased, and in time, not a single cultivator could be seen in the silver streams he stepped. Compared to the loud hubbub in the other silver streams, the path Su Ming took was incredibly quiet.

However, no one paid any attention to this place. For if they did, someone would immediately move forward from the dark and monitor their every moment, but Su Ming did not pay any attention to this.

He liked peace and quiet, and hence... the Lie Shan Family gave him peace and quiet.

Su Ming continued walking for an hour. He was not in a hurry, and he continued walking until a tower appeared in front of him. This was an inn liked by all cultivators. There was an individual Rune in every single room which filled them with spiritual aura.

At this point in time, the place should have been incredibly lively, but right then... the inn was silent. Not a single person could be found in the hall. In fact, the near one hundred rooms that had originally been filled with cultivators had been completely emptied, except for one - Ye Wang's.

The silence around him created a stark contrast with bustle of activity that could be heard from the distance. With a calm expression, Su Ming walked to the door of the inn, went up the stairs, strolled to the end of the second floor, and stopped in front of a room.

He lifted his hand, placed it on the door, and knocked on it lightly.

Knock. Knock. Knock.

"Sir, you sent away all the cultivators in this place and made it so that not a single sound could be heard within a circular area of one hundred li. If you can do such a thing in this lively Worldly Star City when Black Ink Auction is just around the corner... then you are definitely someone of status and power. There is no need for someone like you to knock on my door when you are outside my room," a cold and aloof voice said from the room. Not a single hint of emotion could be heard in it.

Su Ming smiled faintly and said in a light tone, "How could I barge into an old friend's room?"

When he said these words, the room immediately fell silent. After a long while, the door swung open silently, and a gaze filled with complicated emotions as well as disbelief fell on Su Ming from the person sitting by the table.

"It's been... a long while."

Chapter 899: Change

Su Ming had not said those words. Instead, it was said by the young man in white in a voice filled with mixed feelings. Su Ming saw that he was sitting beside the table when the door to his room opened without a sound.

The young man looked quite handsome; he had sharp eyebrows and bright eyes. There was a pride about him that seemed to come straight from his soul, and it was one that could not be dispelled. He was the same as how Su Ming had seen him the first time. He had that lonely but prideful air about him back then, and now... it was still the same.

He was like a sharp sword that was about to be drawn out from its scabbard, existing in a state of equilibrium in which his brilliance was shown to the world but in which he also kept some of that brilliance within himself. This demeanor was enough to make all cultivators who saw Ye Wang unable to help themselves but to look upon him and pay attention to him.

This was Ye Wang, the prodigy with the greatest potential in tens of thousands of years of Immortal history. He was highly valued by Morning Dao Sect and taken in as a successor disciple by the Sect Elder.

He was the pride of the Immortals, which was just like what he held within himself. He lived his life with that pride and his loneliness as his companion. His pride was born from his loneliness, and his loneliness was due to him being too outstanding, because no one by his side could compare to him.

In Ye Wang's mind, the only thing that remained after all that he experienced in his life was a teenager he saw in the land of Berserkers after he participated in the plan in the past.

That had been the first time Ye Wang had fought to a tie against someone, and it could even be said that he had lost during that time. With his pride, there was only losing and winning in his life. There was no such thing as reaching a tie with someone else.

When he was in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he saw Su Ming once again... but he did not provide anyone with this piece of information. This was a secret hidden at the bottom of his heart. In fact, when Su Ming was forced into Western Ring Nebula's foreign land, Ye Wang had gone to the periphery and watched it quietly for a long period of time.

He had no grudge against Su Ming, but there was an obsession in his heart. That obsession was born from his pride, and that was why he wanted to kill Su Ming personally, to wipe off the traces of him ever reaching a tie with someone else from the same generation.

This obsession was also because of his loneliness. In his solitary and dull life, he believed there to only be one person who had the right to be his friend, but he had a limited understanding of that particular word.

"It's been a long while," Su Ming said softly and walked into the room, going in front of Ye Wang and sitting down. There was a table between them, and there was wine on that table. Ye Wang had brought it out to drink alone.

Su Ming looked at Ye Wang. This person was a man who had been the center of attention in what happened in the past. But it did not matter where he was, he looked as if he was used to being the center of attention all the time.

No matter if someone judged in terms of power, potential, or even appearance, he looked as if he was loved by the universe. This was a similarity he shared with Dao Kong, but there was still a difference between the two of them: One was cold, and the other sinister.

Su Ming picked up the pot of wine and poured a full cup for himself and another for Ye Wang. He gently picked his wine cup up and looked at Ye Wang.

The man was silent. The complicated emotions in him had yet to disappear. He looked at Su Ming, and after a long time had passed, he too picked up his wine cup.

"This cup is for the first time we met each other as Berserkers." Su Ming finished the wine in one gulp.

Ye Wang quietly finished the wine, and once he placed the cup by the side, the complicated emotions in his eyes became even greater. He looked at Su Ming and did not speak for a long period of time.

Su Ming, too, did not speak. The two of them sat quietly in the room. It was silent all around them. Not a single sound could be heard. It was as if this region had been wiped off from Worldly Star City.

When the time taken for two incense sticks to burn passed, Ye Wang sighed softly.

"You've changed a lot. The first time we met, you did not know what your preordained fate was. The second time we met, we were already in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence."

"You've also changed a lot. Right now, you're already in the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and by the looks of it, you will only need another thousand years before you reach completion in it." An ancient look slowly appeared on Su Ming's face, one that even he did not notice himself.

Ye Wang was already at the middle stage of World Plane Realm. With this sort of cultivation, it could be said that he had fully brought out his potential. Ye Wang had not been walking down the cultivation for a long time. Without many years behind him, he had reached the middle stage of World Plane Realm with just his own abilities. This was something... Su Ming could not hope to compare.

If he did not have his Ecang clone and the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole... In fact, if Su Ming was not an Abyss Builder, then at that moment, he would perhaps not even have the right to sit in front of Ye Wang.

After all, Su Ming's true level of cultivation was just at the peak of Heaven Cultivation Realm.

Even if he worked much harder than Ye Wang, even if he went through more hardships, and even if the things he had to give up far surpassed the amount Ye Wang had to give up since everything had gone off smoothly for him, it wouldn't matter. Sometimes, potential was something that could not be overcome no matter how much blood, sweat, and tears a person shed to try and surpass someone talented.

"Not small, hmm...? Compared to you, my speed of training is still too slow." Ye Wang picked up the pot of wine. Once he filled his and Su Ming's wine cups, he swallowed the contents of his cup in one gulp.

"I have always believed that the world is fair. The weak will remain weak; no matter how hard they will train, they will never become powerful. As for the strong, they will become stronger and continue until they reach the peak.

"This is the structure of the world I understand... Your potential... is very average, but you managed to walk in front of me. Is this what they mean when they say that the dumb bird flies first?" Ye Wang poured another cup and drank. Even though his pride and his personality did not allow him to fit in with other people, his final sentence contained a hint of provocation.

Su Ming smiled faintly. He picked up his wine cup and drank from it. A profound look appeared in his eyes.

"This so called the dumb bird flies first is a huge cosmic lie and a joke, because there are far too many average people in the world. We... need a form of consolation and motivation. This lie is a form of happiness, a beautiful thing that brings joy and allows a person to willingly immerse themselves in it, until they can no longer free themselves.

"I am indeed a dumb bird. I don't have that shocking talent of yours which makes you the center of attention wherever you go. This is the meaning of unfair," Su Ming said after he put down his cup.

Ye Wang fell silent. A contemplative look appeared in his eyes. After a long while, he cast his gaze outside the window.

"You have indeed stepped in front of me. This has nothing to do with being fair or unfair, but I'd like to hear what sort of enlightening remarks you have about this so called fairness in the universe."

Ye Wang shook his head, and his gaze fell on Su Ming's face once again. His eyes were bright, as if there were emotions causing them to shine. He was an incredibly calculative man. Since his level of cultivation was not comparable to Su Ming's, then perhaps he could open a gap in Su Ming's heart. An error in terms of understanding and epiphany would usually cause a person's level of cultivation to stop at a certain Realm, and he would never be able to advance it any further.

However, to create this gap, he would need to find a crack in Su Ming's heart based on his words and then make that crack larger. This was a divine ability from Morning Dao Sect, and Ye Wang had seen it being used before.

"Someone asked me that question before. He asked why others treated him unfairly." Su Ming pondered over it, then looked at his empty wine cup before saying calmly, "This world has always been unfair. Those who have the delusion of seeking fairness will only meet a miserable end."

"Oh? Then why would they still have that sort of beautiful expectation for fairness?" Ye Wang's eyes flashed with a faint light, Su Ming's words were something worth contemplating. He felt that there was another meaning to them.

"These beautiful lies must exist. Even if people might seek something for their whole lives without obtaining any result... but they would still have sought something. As long as they search for it, there is a chance that they can turn something decaying into something amazing.

"Because as long as they continue searching, there is a chance that they will discover an area in which they are stronger than other people. Even if my potential in the path of cultivation is not great, perhaps I am better than others in terms of handling people. Even if I am not that good at handling people, perhaps I have something I am good with in terms of creation.

"There will always be something that suits me. There will always be a skill I am good with in which others can't compare to me. From this alone we can say that the universe is still fair." Su Ming looked at the wine cup and remembered his identity as an Abyss Builder as well as his inborn ability to Possess clones.

He was a dumb bird, but if he did not have the beautiful lie to support him and that desire to pursue something he was good at because he was unwilling to accept his current situation, he would not have found his forte while looking for his strength.

"What is it that you want to say?"

Ye Wang fell silent. After a long while, he lifted his head and looked at Su Ming. He had not found a single crack in Su Ming's heart from his words. Instead, he had a feeling as if he had been led into his train of thought.

"What was the plan against me which you participated in the past in True Morning Dao World?" Su Ming asked calmly as he smiled faintly.

"You won't want to know," Ye Wang said softly.

"This is also my answer." Su Ming smiled.

A focused glint appeared in Ye Wang's eyes. He looked at Su Ming, and a pensive look gradually appeared in his eyes.

Su Ming then said, "Let me tell you a story. This is a memory I saw in someone's mind. In a mortal world there was once a rich man who wanted to build a house, which was why he searched for a carpenter.

"The rich man looked down on the carpenter because he had plenty of servants and he could decide the carpenter's life and death as he pleased. He believed that the carpenter was a lowly existence. The carpenter behaved himself. He was used to gazes and words that made light of him. He quietly helped the rich man build his house, but when he finished it, he kept all the sharp corners of the wooden items in the house based on his knowledge. There were also quite a large number of thresholds on the ground, which made the house look incredibly gorgeous.

"It doesn't matter whether he left them around for Feng Shui or so that he could create potential dangers, since the carpenter did not expect himself to be able to get any money for his work. Ten years after he left, the rich man fell down and knocked into a sharp corner of one of the wooden objects. Then, he died." Su Ming put down the wine cup he had been toying with in his hand and stood up.

"If you understand this story and the things I said previously, then help me do one thing. If you don't, then I will bid farewell to you now." As Su Ming spoke, he turned around and walked towards the door.

Ye Wang was stunned as Su Ming's words echoed in his head. At the instant Su Ming moved one of his feet out the door, Ye Wang lifted his head.

"Are you telling me what constitutes as being strong? Being a prodigy with great potential is not strong for sometimes there are people who could devise fatal attacks with their own strengths?"

"When you return to the land of Immortals, please go to Yin Death Region and take care of my senior brothers." Su Ming did not turn his head back. He walked out of the room and disappeared into the darkness.

He walked through a quiet silver stream. When he was in Ye Wang's room just then, Su Ming had dispelled the final shred of thought of wanting to Possess him. This sort of person should not die from being Possessed.

If he lived, he would make this universe slightly more interesting.

If he lived, then the Dao Su Ming had planted in his heart with his words would slowly grow and change Ye Wang's entire life.

'What constitutes as being powerful...? You should find your own strength and persevere down that path. Don't care about how others are better than you in other areas, and then someday... we will all arrive at the same spot - the peak, even though we used different paths to come there. This is the true meaning of the dumb bird flies first. Ye Wang, if you do this, you will no longer be a prodigy, but will also become a dumb bird.'

Su Ming continued walking slowly. An enigmatic smile appeared on his face as he walked through the silver streams and past the people bowing respectfully to him as they continued hiding in the dark. Then... he walked out of Worldly Star City.

At the instant he did so, he turned his head around and cast a gaze at the air.

"I do not like being watched like this. I hope that such a thing will not happen a second time between us."

1. Dumb bird flies first: A Chinese idiom that means those who are not as good as the others have to start earlier than the rest. Since the dumb bird metaphor is repeatedly used, I thought it would be best for me to keep this as how it is.

Chapter 900: Preparation

"They say that all forms of life in the world have a kismet..." In a chamber within Worldly Star City were Elder Feng and Elder Yu, standing quietly in the room. There was a screen of light in front of them, and in the screen was Su Ming turning his head around. His gaze seemed to be able to penetrate the screen of light and land on their bodies.

They heard what Su Ming said and fell silent.

"The Lord Fourth God of Berserkers is even more... sinister than the First God of Berserkers," Elder Yu said in a low tone with a slightly odd expression on his face.

"This Ye Wang is a person who has tens of thousands of years worth of kismet from the land of Immortals gathered on him, that is why his potential is incredibly great. In a short time, he managed to reach the middle stage of World Plane Realm, and his future was... boundless.

"After he joined Morning Dao Sect, he also took away part of True Morning Dao World's kismet in an unseen manner. This kismet is formless, and plenty of people believe that it doesn't exist, but it would allow him to grow strong in True Morning Dao World.

"Kismets are abstruse and insubstantial, but in the end, just like when the Lord First God of Berserkers gathered all the land of Berserkers' kismet on him, all those who have a kismet in their bodies must do something that coincides with it, or else... they

will clash against that kismet, and at that time, their kismet will begin scattering away, and it will slowly disappear.

"If this Ye Wang continued walking down his path of cultivation with his understanding, which is to look down upon all lives while being a prideful and solitary existence, then he would have conformed to his kismet. He believed that the world is fair; the weak should be weak, and the strong should be strong. If he continued like this, then his power would have become the might of heavens. He would have fused those kismets into his body, and when he spoke, his words would have become law, and he would have... completed his Dao.

"But once the Fourth God of Berserkers used his epiphany to disrupt Ye Wang's heart, it was left in chaos. Ye Wang originally wanted to find a crack in the Fourth God of Berserkers' mind, but in the end, he was the one to fall into a trap.

"If he truly changed his mind, then from now onwards, he will no longer have a personality that will look down upon all lives. Instead, a new personality will form in his heart, and he will no longer believe that he was a prodigy from the bottom of his heart. At that time... he will truly cease to be a prodigy, and since his kismet will no longer conform to his personality, it will swiftly dissipate.

"Then, he will become a dumb bird."

Elder Feng and Elder Yu shook their heads. However, as they watched Su Ming leaving into the distance through the screen of light, a hint of surprise appeared in their eyes.

"I can only guess that he did so because Ye Wang wanted to kill him. That killing intent was related to Ye Wang's personality and the kismet in him. This prodigy's kismet would not allow him to have anyone oppressing him. Even if he reached a tie with someone, he would consider it a loss, and he would have to kill his opponent to maintain his outlook of looking down upon all lives.

"But I think that our Lord Fourth God of Berserkers should have other motives in doing this..." Elder Yu said with hesitation.

"Could it be related to Dao Kong?" A glint appeared in Elder Feng's eyes.

The two of them looked at each other, but they could not be certain of it.

Three days passed in the blink of an eye. During these three days, many cultivators from the worlds beyond Black Ink Planet arrived like a swarm of bees, turning Black Ink Planet incredibly lively. Members of alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean also came every single day. Their clothing, habits, and everything were different from cultivators, and as they arrived, they immediately caught plenty of attention.

On the fourth morning, Black Ink Auction was launched!

This was a grand auction that only occurred once every few hundred years on Black Ink Planet. It was not held in one of the three great cities, but high in the sky. With Black Water City being the main and Worldly Star City as well as Ink Kirin City being the subsidiaries, rays of powerful light shone up.

They intersected in Black Ink Planet's sky. The principle was similar to Worldly Star City's night city. As the powerful rays of light intersected with each other, an auction hall that surpassed the size of a city appeared out of thin air.

That auction hall was oval-shaped and immeasurable. It could accommodate millions of people and had a huge platform at the center. The edges of the platform were filled with illusory screens of light so that people from farther away would be able to see the item that was on the platform clearly.

When morning arrived, Relocation Runes shone ceaselessly within this gigantic auction hall. There were also long arcs that rushed to the place from all directions.

This time, there were about two million cultivators and members of the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean participating in Black Ink Auction. They would either arrive via Relocation Runes or fly up themselves. Gradually, the auction hall was packed densely with cultivators.

There were also various huge rooms located all around the auction hall. These were prepared for those of high status. The people from the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds were scattered in these rooms.

In fact, most of the members of the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean were also in the rooms.

There were also some cultivators who did not want others to know about their identities so they spent a large amount of crystals in exchange for the right to enter these rooms during Black Ink Auction.

This auction would last for a month, and every single day, a large amount of items would be put on auction, which was worthy of its reputation.

Su Ming sat in a room that belonged to him. The area in front of him was empty, and he could see the huge screens of light on the auction platform. He could also almost see the complete picture of the auction hall.

The thirteen old men from the Yu Family stood behind him quietly, and Yu Rou had also returned. She looked as quiet and elegant as ever, but there was something slightly different about her. At that moment, she stood beside Su Ming, her gaze on the auction hall.

"We've made arrangements for Dao Kong to enter Room 7. There are nine old men beside him, and these people practically never leave his side. There is also another one by his side. Based on Elder Feng's investigations, there is indeed a powerful warrior of Lunar Kalpa Realm by his side as well, and it is a woman.

"She is skilled in hiding, and she should have been sent to his side to protect him. Based on what we understand of Morning Dao Sect, this woman is definitely someone from True Morning Dao World's Phoenix Sect. According to their traditions, she should become Dao Kong's wife in the future," Lie Shan Kang Jiu explained as he stood by Su Ming's side.

"The three thousand fearless warriors from True Morning Dao World were left behind on the plains beyond Black Water City. They've formed a Relocation Rune, and the key to it is on Dao Kong. He only needs to send a divine thought, and the three thousand fearless warriors will be relocated to his side.

"Also..." When Lie Shan Kang Jiu said these words, a loud boom that sounded like a huge wave crashing on the surface of water suddenly rang through the auction hall. This sound was formed by the voices of millions of people in the auction hall, and it could drown out even a thunderclap.

A lyrical melody echoed throughout the entire auction hall. At that moment, three middle-aged men appeared on the platform surrounded by screens of light.

These three people had smiles on their faces, and they wrapped their fists in their palms to bow to all the people in the hall.

'The auction has started...' Su Ming cast a glance at the crowd creating all the noise. He lifted his right hand and swung his arm, and immediately, a screen of light appeared in the empty space in front of him. It dispelled all the sounds from the world outside, and the room immediately fell silent.

"Continue." Su Ming averted his gaze. He was not interested in the auction. The only thing he was interested in was Dao Kong.

"Dao Kong also has subordinates in the nine galactic ships. They are currently floating around Black Ink Planet, and they have already locked onto the auction hall. If any accident happens, they will attack and destroy the place.

"There might be quite a lot of internal strife among the four Great True Worlds, but there also some factions who are working together. If anything happens to Dao Kong here, the cultivators from the other three Great True Worlds will also attack," Lie Shan Kang Jiu said in a low tone. He did not know why Su Ming was aiming at Dao Kong, but while killing Dao Kong was easy, the troubles that would come afterwards would be hard to deal with.

"Has the rules in the auction been altered?" Su Ming asked calmly.

"We have already made arrangements," Lie Shan Kang Jiu quickly said.

"When Dao Kong disappears, I will need you to... buy the time to take thirty breaths." Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung it at the screen of light, which immediately distorted and revealed the sights of the world outside. At the same time, the sounds from the area outside once again reached his ears.

"... As a sign of gratitude for all of you fellow Daoists who attended Black Ink Auction, this time, all of the three greatest families and all other families within Black Ink Planet have made some changes in the rules of the auction.

"Do not worry, everyone. This change in the rules is incredibly beneficial for all of you.

"In the past, only when the auction had ended would we send the items you bought in the auction to you. However, this time, we have changed the rules. The moment you buy an item, it will be immediately delivered to your hands.

"Because of this, if you want to leave early, it will be much easier for you to do so. This matter has been mentioned by quite a number of Daoists in the past, and this time, the families in Black Ink Planet have decided to implement this suggestion."

Su Ming watched the auction outside and listened to the noise with his usual calm expression.

Lie Shan Kang Jiu looked as if he wanted to say something as he stood by the side, but in the end, he chose to obey Su Ming's words. He nodded, announced his leave, and left.

Su Ming's heart was calm at that moment. Everything was going according to his plan. Right then, all he needed was to wait for the fish to take the bait, and he would obtain his third clone... his cultivation base clone!

Su Ming narrowed his eyes and waited silently.

He looked at the items put on auction and listened to the intense cries from the people as they placed their bids. Their voices rose and fell, and the world seem to bubble with excitement because of them.

Up to that point, not a single sound calling out a bid came from the room in which Dao Kong stayed, but Su Ming was not in a hurry.

When noon arrived, the sun in the sky shone brilliantly. When another item was brought out and plenty of voices called out to place their bids, Su Ming heard a woman placing a bid from Dao Kong's room.

"Get ready," Su Ming said flatly.

The thirteen Progenitors from the Yu Family immediately sported solemn expressions on their faces. They swiftly sat down and surrounded Su Ming, forming a circle that was one hundred something feet big.

With brightly burning eyes, they started circulating their cultivation bases.

As for Yu Rou, she moved back and sat down by the door of the room. Her duty was to prevent all people from entering. By her side was the Duke of Crimson Flame. He would be defending that door with her.

Chapter 901: The Item from Morning Dao

"I'm definitely getting that Sky Forest Branch! 4,000,000 crystals!"

"Everyone knows that the Sky Forest Branch can allow all of my juniors and my disciples to mould their spirits and gather their souls, even avoid running into all stone walls possible in their path of cultivation. I'll offer 4,500,000!"

"5,000,000," a woman's voice said airily from the room in which Dao Kong stayed.

At the instant the woman's voice rang out in the air, a soft-spoken voice immediately echoed in the auction from another room. "7,000,000."

Once that price was offered, all those who had been competing against each other fell silent. The price offered to buy that Sky Forest Branch was a little too high. Even the people in Dao Kong's room had fallen silent.

Su Ming frowned.

"It's someone from True Sacred Yin World," Yu Rou said softly.

Su Ming did not speak. He slowly stopped frowning, and his expression became calm once again. He knew that he could not afford to be hasty about this. Unless Dao Kong did not manage to buy any item from the auction hall, then he would definitely fall into the plan laid out just for him.

Dressed in his Sacred Constellation Robe, Dao Kong sat on a long chair within his room. At that moment, his emotions could not be told from his face. There was a wine cup in his hand, and he was swirling the wine inside it. His gaze fell on the auction hall beyond the illusory screen of light in front of him.

The nine old men with their eyes shut were sitting cross-legged behind his chair. Waves of power spread out faintly from their bodies and filled the entire room.

As for the woman with the pointy ears, she was kneeling beside Dao Kong's body with her head bent to reveal the tender skin on her neck.

"This is just the first day, and those people from True Sacred Yin World already can't wait to compete against me, hmm?" Dao Kong smiled, unconcerned, and finished the contents in his cup in one gulp. When he lifted his hand, a black ring could be seen on his right index finger.

This ring was not a physical item. It looked like a pattern of a thin thread had been branded onto Dao Kong's finger. This was a Relocation Rune, and with just one thought, he could immediately have all three thousand of his fearless warriors sent over.

"It's a pity, a pity..." Dao Kong's smile was a touch sinister. He put down the wine cup and closed his eyes.

In the blink of an eye, dusk arrived for the first day of Black Ink Auction. Ever since Dao Kong placed a bid, a woman's voice could be heard placing a bid once every few items.

The bids she placed were not high nor low most of the time. They were bids that were considered to be incredibly worthwhile if she won the item, that is, if no one else placed a bid higher than hers, but if someone else placed another bid, the item they bought would only be somewhat worthwhile.

In fact, if anyone continued placing bids, Dao Kong would fall silent and not place another bid on that item

As Su Ming watched the dusk-colored sky outside, his face remained calm. Black Ink Auction was not just held during the day, but also continued into the night, and this would last for an entire month.

To a mortal, their energy would not be enough for them to last through all of it. In fact, they might already be incredibly tired after lasting for two or three days. However, to a cultivator, going an entire month without sleep was something incredibly normal, which was why when evening passed and night fell, powerful rays of light immediately appeared in the auction hall. These rays of light intersected with each other in the sky, and in an instant, the world looked as if it was day, though from the distance, the starry sky could still be seen.

This perfection of being able to see the stars while one's surroundings were bright as if it were day created a picture of unparalleled beauty. All those who saw it could not help but sigh in admiration.

As day and night continued changing places with each other, three days passed. During this times, Su Ming paid close attention to every single action within the auction hall, but Dao Kong had yet to walk into his plans. During the three days, Dao Kong had behaved the same as he did during the first day. He continued placing bids once every few items, but it was clear that he did not want to buy them.

The people in the auction hall gradually realized what Dao Kong was doing, and slowly, no one paid any attention to him. After all, every single item brought out within Black Ink Auction had its own value, and usually, it would be incredibly difficult for them to obtain these items from other places, which was why every single item in the auction resulted in plenty of people competing over them.

'Is he waiting...?' Su Ming closed his eyes. If Dao Kong did not buy anything, then it would leave him unable to continue with his plan. In silence, Su Ming sat with a calm heart.

Time trickled by without anyone's knowledge as the voices from the area beyond became increasingly stronger. The further Black Ink Auction progressed, the more precious the items brought out were, and the attention placed upon them as well as the desire to absolutely obtain them also became greater.

"This item came from Divine Essence Star Ocean. It is a drop of Divine Liquid that gathered up the essence from an area of ten thousand lis. This liquid can transform into all sorts of forms and has endless amounts of uses. Fellow Daoists, the starting bid for this Divine Essence Star Liquid is 30,000,000 crystals. I can tell all of you that there are only five drops of this Divine Liquid during this Black Ink Auction, and this is the first drop!"

Seven days later, when Black Ink Auction was boiling with extreme excitement, the auction host brought out the first precious treasure that caused all the hearts of the people in the area to tremble.

This was the first important item brought out within the auction!

Almost at the instant the auction host finished speaking, excited, gloomy, and loud voices immediately rang in the air.

"33,000,000 crystals."

"37,000,000!"

"40,000,000!"

The powerful voices rose and fell, and some of the people in the rooms also started placing bids. The appearance of precious treasures such as this Divine Liquid caused

all the people here to go mad for it, and in the blink of an eye, the price had already shot up to around sixty million.

Su Ming listened to the clamor within the auction with a calm expression. There was originally not just five drops of that Divine Liquid... but ten. However, five drops had been taken by him, and they were now in his storage bag.

Divine Essence Star Liquid could be drunk or inhaled. If one inhaled it, then they could inhale one drop for one hundred times. Every single time a person took a whiff of that liquid, their cultivation base would return to its peak. It was an item every cultivator dreamed of possessing.

Divine Liquid was not the only item that possessed such an effect, but the others were incredibly difficult to obtain. On top of that, if a person had a high level of cultivation, the effects would be reduced. However, this Divine Liquid could fully restore all those who were below Solar Kalpa Realm. In fact, if a monster from Solar Kalpa Realm drank one complete drop, they would also be able to achieve the same results.

During a crucial moment, this Divine Liquid would become a chance that would allow a person to survive.

If there was someone who was skilled in making medicinal cores, then with this liquid as the main ingredient, Star Ocean Core could be made, and the effects to the monsters in Solar Kalpa Realm would be even greater.

Because of that, it was not surprising that the price for the item shot up to such an extent.

'I'd like to see whether you'll be tempted by this item.' Su Ming cast his gaze on the room where Dao Kong was and waited silently.

In Dao Kong's room, Dao Kong stared at the Divine Liquid on the screen of light on the platform with bright eyes. The noise formed by people placing their bids reached his ears, and a hint of hesitation appeared briefly on his face.

When the Divine Liquid was bought by someone at the price of 75,000,000 crystals, Dao Kong sighed, giving up on the other four drops of Divine Liquid that were subsequently put on auction.

'This item is good, but even if I buy it and offer it as a gift to those of the older generation in the family, I wouldn't be able to obtain much benefit. As for personal use... There's a medicinal core that has a similar effect in Morning Dao Sect. After all, I'm only at the middle stage of World Plane Realm, so those medicinal cores can restore my cultivation base once I finish them. There is no need for me to pay an exorbitant price to buy this item.'

Dao Kong remained silent for a moment, then shook his head.

The remaining four drops of Divine Liquid were sold off, but Dao Kong never once placed a bid. This caused Su Ming to frown.

It had been seven days. A small part of the auction was over, but Dao Kong hadn't bought a single item. This caused him to frown, and a pensive look appeared on his face.

After a long time, Su Ming closed his eyes and continued waiting.

The eighth day, the ninth day, the tenth day...

When fifteen days went by, half of the auction was over, but most of the time, Dao Kong was only placing bids in an insincere manner. He had never shown any true interest in wanting to buy anything. When the twentieth day arrived and the auction brought out another precious treasure that caused an uproar among the people, Su Ming still did not manage to hear Dao Kong fighting for it.

Dao Kong could only watch in resignation as various items were bought by others. It was not that he did not want to buy them... but all of the crystals he had in hand could not be used here. He had a secret deal with the Hua Family. Once the auction ended, he would get that thing in exchange for his crystals and some slots to the True Morning Dao World.

This was the mission given to him when he came to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. As for the auction, to him, it was really just an interlude.

"It's a pity... a real pity..." Dao Kong sighed, picked up his wine cup, and took a sip from it.

Time passed once again. When the twenty-third day arrived, Su Ming slowly opened his eyes. There was still seven days before Black Ink Auction would end. There were going to be plenty of treasures that would be brought out to be placed on auction during the last seven days, but Su Ming could already tell that Dao Kong... had no intention of competing for anything.

Thus, there was no need for him to wait seven more days.

A freezing glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

'Since you don't want to participate in this auction, then I will force you... to participate in it!' Su Ming smiled coldly, and he lifted his right hand to strike his body. Light left his body, a brilliant long arc flew out from him and charged towards Yu Rou.

"Take that and add it to the list of items that will be up for bidding next! The starting bid for that thing is 10,000,000 crystals," Su Ming said coldly. Yu Rou was stunned for a moment as she cast a glance at the brilliant object in her hands. Then, she lowered her head and walked out of the room.

After a moment, when Yu Rou returned and the next item was sold in the auction hall, the auction host's slightly excited voice rang in the air.

"This time, the item that will be put on auction is not a foreign treasure from Divine Essence Star Ocean and neither is it a strange item from Sinful Barren Lands. It... came from the four Great True Worlds!

"Among the four Great True Worlds, this treasure is the one that gains the most amount of attention from True Morning Dao World. It is incredibly difficult for others to obtain this treasure. In fact, it could be said that if anyone else obtained it, they would incite True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect, and they would be hunted down till they died!

"This is because this treasure symbolizes a bloody battle, and means... that a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect had died!"

As the host's voice echoed in the air, the auction instantly fell into dead silence. Dao Kong had his eyes closed in his room, but once he heard those words, they flew open, and he looked over at the platform.